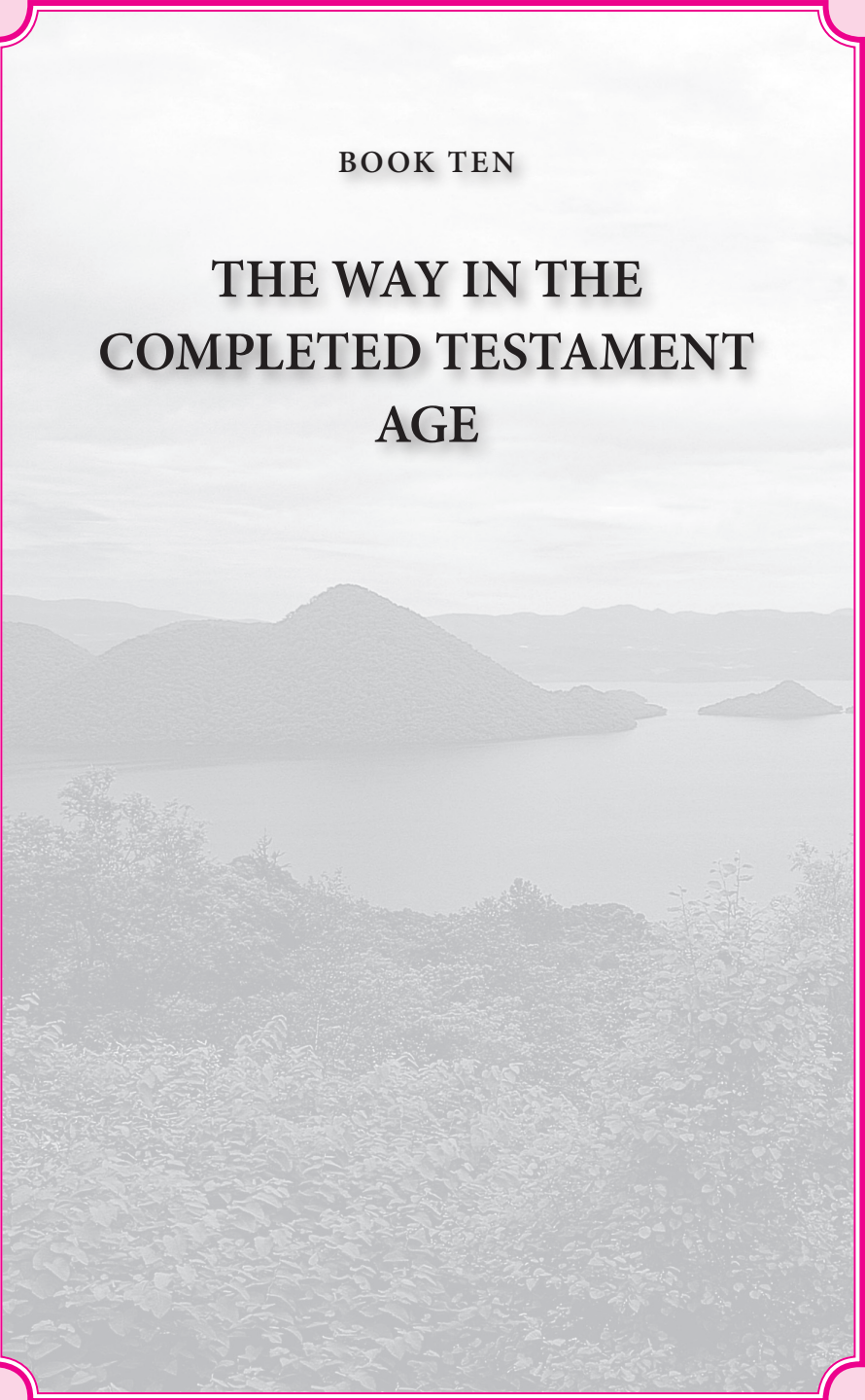


BOOK TEN

**THE WAY IN THE  
COMPLETED TESTAMENT  
AGE**





# Contents

## Chapter 1. A Perspective on Human Life

<b>Section 1. What Is Human Life?</b> .....	1465
1.1. Problems in life have been like a maze .....	1465
1.2. What is our destiny? .....	1467
<b>Section 2. Human Beings Are Resultant Beings</b> .....	1468
2.1. Human beings was born from God's love .....	1468
2.2. Original purpose for the birth of human beings .....	1470
2.3. We live for the sake of love .....	1471
<b>Section 3. The Great Value of Human Beings</b> .....	1473
3.1. Original human value is akin to that of God .....	1473
3.2. Human beings: temples for God to indwell .....	1476
<b>Section 4. Original Human Nature and the True Lifestyle</b> .....	1479
4.1. Live in harmony with your original mind .....	1479
4.2. Human perfection means mind-body unity .....	1480
4.3. The original mind is the teacher and closest to God .....	1483
<b>Section 5. The Path of True People</b> .....	1487
5.1. The path people should seek .....	1487
5.2. The way true human beings should go .....	1490
5.3. The rationale for establishing the law of living for the sake of others ..	1492

## Chapter 2. A Perspective on the Family

<b>Section 1. What Is an Ideal Family?</b> .....	1496
1.1. Why is the family valuable? .....	1496
1.2. The family gives birth to the love for society, nation, and humanity ....	1499
<b>Section 2. The Family Is the Basic Unit of Heaven</b> .....	1503
2.1. Family is the cornerstone of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven ....	1503
2.2. The family is the training ground for true love .....	1506
<b>Section 3. The Ideal and Value of True Family</b> .....	1511
3.1. True parents, true couples, and true children .....	1511
3.2. The qualities of a true family .....	1515
<b>Section 4. We Enter Heaven as a Family</b> .....	1519
<b>Section 5. The Family Pledge</b> .....	1523
5.1. Those who can recite the Family Pledge .....	1523
5.2. The content of the Family Pledge .....	1525

## Chapter 3. A Perspective on the Nation and the World

<b>Section 1. The One Nation and World Sought by Humankind</b> .....	1536
1.1. The Adam-centered ideology, Adam's nation and Adam's world .....	1536
1.2. The nation we all desire .....	1538
<b>Section 2. Characteristics of an Ideal Society, Nation and World</b> .....	1542
2.1. Humankind as one extended family .....	1542

2.2. The society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values .....	1545
2.3. One language .....	1546
<b>Section 3. The Way of True Love is the Central Ideology of Humankind</b> ....	1548
3.1. The way of Adam is the way of the parent .....	1548
3.2. The way of the parent is the way of true love .....	1550
<b>Section 4. The Future of the Democratic and Communist Worlds</b> .....	1554
4.1. Unifying the democratic and communist worlds .....	1554
4.2. Head-wing thought will rectify religion and philosophy .....	1558
<b>Section 5. When God-centered Sovereignty Is Restored</b> .....	1560
5.1. The world where God's will is fulfilled .....	1560
5.2. Seeking God's nation .....	1563

## Chapter 4. The Way in the Completed Testament Age

<b>Section 1. The Settlement of the Victorious Domain of True Parents</b> .....	1566
1.1. Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages: restoration of the right of the eldest son, right of the parent and right of kingship .....	1566
1.2. Restoration of the right of the parent and right of kingship through the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father .....	1568
<b>Section 2. Complete Providential Settlement and the Great Proclamation of the True Parents</b> .....	1570
2.1. Proclamation of the True Parents (Messiah) .....	1570
2.2. Declaration of God's Eternal Blessing ( <i>Chil Il Jeol</i> : 7.1. Day) .....	1572
2.3. Declaration of the elimination of historical indemnity .....	1574
2.4. Declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth ( <i>Chil Pal Jeol</i> : 7.8. Day) .....	1575
2.5. Proclamation of the liberation of hell and the opening of the gates of heaven .....	1579
2.6. Ceremony for the Total Liberation of the People in the Spirit World .....	1580
2.7. Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage .....	1584
2.8. Proclamation of the Completion of the Completed Testament Age and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven .....	1586
2.9. Declaration of Congratulations for True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory .....	1588
2.10. Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory .....	1590
2.11. Declaration of the Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos of the Parents of Heaven and Earth ( <i>Gu Gu Jeol</i> : 9.9. Day) .....	1593
2.12. Declaration of the Era of the Fourth Adam ( <i>Ssang Shib Jeol</i> – Double Ten Day) .....	1597

<b>Section 3. The Seven Great Jardim Declarations and the Establishment of the New Eden</b> .....	1597
3.1. The first declaration: The New Hope Farm Declaration .....	1597
3.2. The second declaration: Absolute, Unique, Unchanging and Eternal Ideal Family .....	1598
3.3. The third declaration: Declaration of the First, Second and Third Creators .....	1599
3.4. The fourth declaration: Declaration of the Accomplishment of our Destined Task .....	1600
3.5. The fifth declaration: <i>Sa Sa Jeol</i> (4.4. Day); Declaration of the Family ...	1603
3.6. The sixth declaration: Ceremony of Liberation and Unification of All Spirits and the Entire Spirit World .....	1604
3.7. The seventh declaration: Declaration of the Cosmic <i>Sa Sa Jeol</i> (4.4. Day)	1605
<b>Section 4. The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification</b> .....	1606
<b>Section 5. Crossing Through the Valley of the Fall</b> .....	1607
5.1. The Parents' path is different from that of the children .....	1607
5.2. The path of children is the path of absolute obedience .....	1608
5.3. Blessed members' rules and duties .....	1611
<b>Section 6. The Realm of the Fourth Adam Is the Era of Freedom and Autonomy</b> .....	1614
6.1. The era of the fourth Adam is that of natural restoration .....	1614
6.2. The era of praying in one's own name .....	1616
6.3. The era of creating oneself in the status of the second creator .....	1616
<b>Section 7. The Royal Family of Love</b> .....	1618
7.1. Heaven is open to those with the qualities of the royal family .....	1618
7.2. Become a person of love .....	1623



## CHAPTER ONE

# A Perspective on Human Life

### Section 1. What Is Human Life?

#### 1.1. Problems in life have been like a maze

Why were we born, why should we live, and where should we go? You should not think that you were the cause of your birth. People are born into this world yet do not know the origin and purpose of their birth; they are ignorant of the motivation and purpose of their existence.

Neither our birth nor our life nor our death stems from our own intentions. Then, what do we have to be proud about? We have no control over our birth, we are merely custodians in this life, and we cannot avoid the path of death. Thus, any attempt at self-praise and holding self-indulgent pride is pitiful. Once born, we are destined to live, and destined to die and pass away to the next world. (7-178, 1959.9.6)

Up to this present day, philosophy has historically labored to solve the problems of human life. Many philosophers arose and took great pains to come up with all kinds of theories with regard to true human value and perfection, and to succeed on their own in order to be

proud before the whole universe. However, today we see that all ideologies and assertions that led to the establishment of new ideological systems were tested in practice by human society and found to be failures; they all fell by the wayside.

(141-125, 1986.2.20)

Why do people live haphazardly, hating to die, yet harbor many questions in their minds, such as, “Why am I living? What is the origin of my life?” The answers to these questions cannot be found in books written by philosophers because the purpose of philosophy lies in seeking and paving the way toward God. Then what is religion? Religious life begins from learning about God in order to live together with Him. (186-12, 1989.1.24)

What is the purpose of this life? You should reflect on this question once more. Since we are not the cause, it follows that the purpose does not lie with us alone. No one would object to the idea of being happy in life. No one would reject a dazzling life. Yet none of us is free to live as we please. Still, each of us wishes to feel pride in ourselves, live freely with respect to our own will, and be remembered accordingly. These

conflicting elements can all be found within our hearts. (7-178, 1959.9.6)

Let us say you live up to eighty years of age. If you subtract the hours you spend sleeping, you are left with about fifty years of life. Would you say you are alive when you are asleep? When you are asleep, you are as good as dead, because you are inanimate. Sleeping is the same as being dead the whole time. The number of hours you labor each day to make a living is about half of the twenty-four hours in a day. Now deduct the time you spend eating. From whatever time is left subtract the time spent visiting, going to friends' parties, attending the sixtieth birthday celebrations of village elders, attending funerals and wakes, and being bedridden. In short, if you were to exclude all the days you lose for whatever reasons that might arise, you cannot claim to have actually lived very much. Would it even be half of your entire lifetime? When I calculated this recently, it came out as roughly seven years. Even so, of those seven years, how many days could you claim to have truly lived? (49-336, 1971.10.24)

Life passes by very quickly. After attaining maturity and coming to know the affairs of the world, doing things here and there, you will find yourselves crossing the forty-year mark, and soon after that, the fifty-year mark. A decade will fly by in the twinkling of an eye, and in what will seem like only seconds, you will be sixty years old. Then very

soon you will be seventy, but only for a minute before you age again. When you think about it, the saying, "Life is but a fleeting dream," has never sounded so true. (188-38, 1989.2.16)

A person's fortune stretches and shrinks like an elastic rubber band. If someone who is born with fortune valued at 100 spends 120 in the course of his life, his descendants will perish. If he spends only 80, he can bequeath the remaining 20 as a blessing to his descendants. (78-332, 1975.6.10)

You can change your fortune, but not your inherited destiny. Can you change your homeland? Can you change your parents? However strong a nation's sovereignty and customs might be, it can never change the fact that you were born as the son or daughter of your parents. As can be seen, the path of restoration is also a destined path. (172-55, 1988.1.7)

When you make a wrong start, you end up in a totally unexpected place. Hence, when a ship sets out into the great ocean, it should chart its course and follow the compass from the moment it first sets sail from port. Then, what is the port of departure for human life? People do not know. Where can we find the direction and guiding compass to reach our destination in the world beyond? People have not been able to find this, so they have been wandering about back and forth. However much they try, they are not able to overcome their human limitations. (172-28, 1988.1.3)



## 1.2. What is our destiny?

Where will we go after this life? People must resolve this important issue. Religions and philosophies arose historically to do this. You therefore cannot deny that all of you too are caught up and driven by this destiny.

That being always the case, where are our minds and bodies trying to go? Where are our hearts, wishes, hopes, and ideals trying to go? Toward what do our lives incline? Even if we cannot answer these questions, we are still destined to eventually pass away. When we die, our bodies will be buried in the ground. So then, will our minds, lives, hearts, ideals, and even hopes be buried together the day our bodies are buried? Do they disappear? Unless you have sound contents, solutions, and a purposeful perspective, you will inevitably become unhappy people. (8-194, 1959.12.20)

In order for cicadas to become adults, they must first hatch from eggs and then pass through the maggot or larval stage. While in that stage, they live either underwater or underground, but that is not the final stage of their life cycle. Their ultimate destiny is to fly in the air. Before they can do so, however, they need to make preparations while they are underground or underwater and these preparations are indispensable.

For them to pass on from the larval to the adult stage, they need to make thorough preparations to fly while still in the previous stage. To pass from the former to the latter, they need to first shed their

shell, the final barrier before their state of maturity, and molt into adult insects. While living in water as nymphs, they need to be broad and flat, to float easily; on the other hand, when they have become adults and must fly in the air, retaining such a shape would not work. Thus, they need to undergo a complete metamorphosis to adapt accordingly. (120-222, 1982.10.17)

For what reason are we born? What should be the focus of our life, and for what purpose do we pass on? These questions can never be answered without God. Without Him, we cannot find our true purpose in life. Those who lack purpose can neither reap the fruit of their work nor have their value recognized.

A building is constructed according to an architect's blueprint. Without reference to that original blueprint, it cannot become what was originally intended in the design. (21-100, 1968.11.17)

The arrival of autumn foretells the coming of winter. Only those with vitality can pass through the course of winter. Things without vitality cannot but retreat from it. Thus, they need to be infused with new life before the coming of winter. We need a new principle and thought based on a new love, and a new outlook on life, the world, and the universe. Without these, we cannot survive through winter. The course is arduous, but once you acquire the vitality to pass through winter, spring will draw nearer with each passing day. The mild spring

days will soon arrive. This is the path trodden by the Unification Church. (35-68, 1970.10.3)

## Section 2. Human Beings Are Resultant Beings

### 2.1. Human beings was born from God's love

We were not born of our own free will, or as a result of plans drawn up by our parents to have a particular son or daughter. Thus, we were not born at the request of our parents. If we were to research further into the origins of our existence based on God's providence, there would be no other way than to conclude that we are in accord with the origin of the providence, and were born on earth to bear the important responsibility of forming a relationship with the ever-shifting history based on that origin. Therefore, although each individual seems small in the process of history, it does not mean that we will end up as nothing more than small insignificant beings. (34-155, 1970.9.6)

Where is the origin through which human beings can connect their births and themselves? Faced with the principles of this great universe, where should they begin to look to find the origin that they can claim to be theirs? Born as resultant beings, those who do not know the causal being, but who yet assert themselves as wise, are all out of their minds (83-191, 1976.2.8)

There is a very simple answer to the questions: "Why were we born?" "Why did God create humankind?" "Why did He create all things of creation?" God requires an object of His love, and thus He created human beings in order to fulfill this.

At this moment aren't you thinking, "I am worthless; therefore, it would not matter whether I continued to live or not"? Yet there is no reason for you to think in this way. Being the object of God's love is like being loved by your parents; they do not love only their more capable children. They love all of their children equally regardless of their capability. Similarly, parents with disabled children ache more for them.

God, who is the center of heaven and earth, has a heart of love that transcends the limits of our capabilities. What is most important is whether you can manifest love through your original nature. Hence, you need to know why you were created and why the whole universe came into being. You need to know that you, as well as the whole universe, were created to realize the ideal of love. (130-44, 1983.12.11)

Why did God create the whole universe, and why did He create us? It was for love. Why were we born? We were born due to God's love. We were born from His love and destined to live in His love. To become a person who can claim to be loved by your family, your society, your nation, and the world, as well as by God, you would first need to live in His love. (97-266, 1978.3.19)

What was it that you were born with as an endowment from your parents? It can be said that you were born as the connectors of life. At the place where your mother and father united, you were born with the value of the vital force of both parents within you. That vital force exists for love, and that force and love exist to fulfill the purpose of the universe. That is how it is. In short, you were born to fulfill an overall purpose. Whether man or woman, everyone is born from the union based on the vital force in order to perfect themselves as co-creators in fulfilling the great purpose of the universe. (110-72, 1980.11.9)

Why were we born? For what purpose were we born? It was for God's love. According to the nature of that love, if we were to go "boom!" here, God would feel a "ting!" directly on His head. If you throw something into the middle of a pond, "plop!" ripples would spread out to the edges of the pond. In the same way, if you were to cast love into the center of the universe, "phut!" the ripples would spread out to all corners of the universe. Such is the work we are doing. The question is through what you can create great ripples. (103-254, 1979.3.4)

Who is God? He is the Creator. Who is the Creator? The religious world conceives of God as our Father and us as His children. What kind of a father is He? In what way is He our Father? It gets rather vague after that. Is He a foster father, a father from the next town, or an adoptive father? What sort of par-

ent is He? Is He the father of a groom or a bride? The word "father" has various meanings. Without solving this fundamental problem, however deep or wide you delved into the world to solve it, you would never find the solution. Even after tens of thousands of years, you would not be any nearer the solution than you are now.

The answer lies in the relationship between humankind and God. Let us say that He is our Father; have you ever felt that He is indeed your Father? Before you existed, your father and mother already existed. Based on this premise, it follows that before you can claim to exist, you should first claim that your parents exist. That is only right. Asserting your existence and leaving out your parents is foolish. (188-190, 1989.2.26)

Human beings are not the first or causal beings. They are the second or resultant beings. Hence, before speaking of yourself, you should first affirm the existence of your mother and father. From this point of view, is it not obvious that you should first settle the fundamental question of God as the Origin of the universe? If you were to go further than your mother and father up your genealogy, would you not eventually arrive at God? Following this logic, before you can assert yourself you need to reach a conclusion with regard to God and His nature, that He is our Father, and that as such He has a certain type of character. That is why the Unification Church is teaching you this. (188-190, 1989.2.26)

You need to comprehend properly the original starting point of human life. As resultant beings, human beings need to conform to the causal starting point. Although you need to conform to that causal point, it cannot be devoid of content. Since God also possesses human character, all people have within them the God-given faculties of intellect, emotion, and will. That is why the motive of His love should be greater than its substance of the origin. It must also be absolute. If something starts out wrong, its path can never be rectified. (172-32, 1988.1.3)

## 2.2. Original purpose for the birth of human beings

God is the first Cause of the universe and the Creator of everything under the sun. He is also our beloved Father. He made all the things of creation in order to fulfill His unique will. His purpose lies in the manifestation of love. Though He may be the Origin of true love and omnipotent, He cannot feel the joy of love by Himself. He needs an object for His love, and desires to receive voluntary love in return. The culmination of all the creation, created to be in the highest position, is man and woman. Consequently, we have a purpose in our life. That purpose requires our becoming mature and realizing a relationship of eternal true love with Him. This is the fundamental principle through which harmony can be achieved between Him and us. (166-131, 1987.6.1)

It may be important to live in affluence and to do something in life; however, before anything else, you need to fulfill your duties of filial piety and loyalty to the vertical Heavenly Parent and surpass living saints in your devotion to Him. Such is the original purpose for humankind's birth. He created us in order to meet such people. Such is our underlying purpose. (58-231, 1972.6.11)

Where is the righteous path in life? From where did human beings originate? They were born from love; then what path should they follow in life? It is that of love. For what should they die? The logical conclusion is love. What kind of love is that? It is that which can be welcomed by the macrocosm, not just the microcosm. The purpose of life can be perceived as originating in the heart of the macrocosm and approved by God, the angelic world, all creation, all people, and our parents. That purpose is to live in the universe, to love in it, and to die in it. (83-164, 1976.2.8)

When people are pleased about something, they wish to share their joy with their parents, siblings, and relatives. Pleasure brings about happiness. Happiness is eternal, and what is eternal is the heart of love. What is the center of the universe? It is parents and children, that is, parents and us. It is God and us. God is our Father and we are His children. Our ultimate purpose in life is to find our Father and to feel infinite joy by forming an inseparable relationship with Him. (12-104, 1962.12.16)

Once I was walking down the street and happened to strike up a conversation with an old man. I asked him, "Where are you going?" and he answered, "Where else, where else but my son's home?" I then asked, "Is that so, what will you do when you get there?" and he replied, "I will eat whatever is placed before me, and if they are so good as to serve me chicken, I will relish having some of that too." I questioned him once more, "What will you do after you have had your meal?" and this is the answer he gave, "Nothing much." Do we have to spend our lives like this? (19-289, 1968.3.10)

When balancing the ledger of a store, you have to calculate revenue and expenditure accurately. In balancing the accounts of a mere store, you have to exercise care. However, do you pay as much attention when you balance the accounts of your life? Have you ever even tried to balance the accounts of your life? Have you gone into the red, or are you in the black? If you see red ink, you should lament most grievously.

People should be able to sing for joy on their deathbed. If you find yourself struggling to accept the reality of death when face it, that struggle only goes to show that you have lived a life in the red. We should lead our lives in the black in the realm of heart, based on the absolute standard. (19-289, 1968.3.10)

For whom do people live? If you were to answer, "For myself," you would get a failing mark. Could a family sustain itself through those who live only

for themselves? They could not form a family of hope. Could a nation sustain itself through them? It could not. Can the world sustain itself through them? It could not. There would be no place for the world in their lives. The public mind of heaven and earth would reprimand them, "You individualistic villains! Get out of here!" If people always put themselves first, will there be a place for their families? Would there be a place for an ideal nation? Could they enter through a hole that is even narrower than the tip of a knife? However much they tried, they could never enter through such a small space. (57-66, 1972.5.28)

You should understand love. The purpose for every existence is love. You must keep this unchanging principle in your heart that tells you to pursue love and exist for love. Birds fly around, chirping, delighting in each other's company, all because of love, and the positive and negative poles of magnets attract each other and stick fast, all because they want to become one in love. People always seek to meet their other half to become one with them. (67-159, 1973.6.1)

### 2.3. We live for the sake of love

How should we lead our lives? From where and for what purpose were we brought into existence, and how should we live? The answer is simple. Since we were born of the love based on God and because of love, we should seek out the path of love, and follow it to its destination. In this manner, we can continue

moving in an endless cycle. Love is an eternal concept, and therefore we will ultimately arrive at the center in our search for love. This can only be realized through love. (125-65, 1983.3.6)

The life we are leading on earth is not for our own sake. We are living for the sake of God's love. For that purpose, we are in a continuous state of action and existence. How splendid that is! Those who lead such a life can never be brought to ruin. Hardships, tears and misery would not make us miserable, bitter, or sad because we would be enduring them all for the love of God. You should understand this principle. (67-159, 1973.6.1)

For what purpose are we living? Absolute true love! Let us live for true love! Everything is included in it. Even the handkerchief in my pocket exists for love. I work and sweat for love, for the sake of true love. I speak for true love, I eat for true love, I play for true love; in fact, everything is for true love. (107-205, 1980.5.1)

What should be the purpose of humankind? Rather than setting the purpose as an individual, a family, a social organization, a nation, the world, or heaven and earth, human beings should progress towards the common goal of God and humankind centered on Him.

Then what would be the ultimate purpose? That which is based on the individual, family, society, nation, or world is sure to drift away. What remains at the

very end, after everything else is gone, would be the purpose pursued jointly by God and humankind. Only such a purpose, and no other, can remain to the final day of history. (41-323, 1971.2.18)

What is the final destination where your minds settle in the end? Even when you have found God and made Him yours, you would not try to rest your mind there. The final destination of your mind would be the place where you have taken possession of God and His love. Thus, if you fail to possess His love, everything will be in vain. (24-17, 1969.6.22)

Regarding the final purpose of life, the question is not whether we can meet with God, the Center of heaven. It is whether we are living together with Him. The question lies in where we would meet Him, if we were to do so. If we were to live with Him, what sort of a place would that be? In short, we need to meet Him and live with Him at the central place, and that is the place of His love. That is why the greatest aspiration of the human conscience is to follow heavenly fortune, to become one with God, and to possess His love. That is the conclusion. (24-17, 1969.6.22)

The final desire of human beings is to become the object of love to the greatest being, who is our Father, and at the same time, God. (65-46, 1972.11.13)

Originally, all people, regardless of who they may be, were endowed with

the privilege of being born as the crown princes and princesses in God's Kingdom. Such is their value. Such was the dignity of human beings as originally intended. (68-326, 1973.8.5)

Once they establish a relationship of heart with Him, everyone can become God's children. The value of human beings does not depend on their cultural backgrounds, historical environments, or current situations. Nothing on earth can determine the value of human beings. What determines their value is whether they know God, His purpose, the purpose of human beings, and the purposes of all the things of creation. (15-83, 1965.9.29)

We need to search for a new set of values upon which to base our lives. We need to seek new values with regard to the world, humankind, ideology, and love. When that set of values begins to take shape in accordance with God's will, its matrix will be completely different from the current set of values established through human will. (44-227, 1971.5.23)

In this world of today, we need a definite set of values that go beyond the worldly view. The Unification Church has placed God at the center of a new set of values. Our aim is not just to return to the world, the ideal world. We are arguing that we should return to God. If we fail to return to Him, there can be no ideal world of happiness, eternity, and love. This is because the primary factors

of happiness, every situation we desire, can only begin from God. For this reason, we need to return to Him. Therefore, you must understand that institutions of religion emerged in history, yearning for and in pursuit of this primary need. (68-138, 1973.7.29)

The Unification Church is presenting the world with absolute values, and at the same time, True Parents. Where is the final destination of the standard of absolute values, the one desired by everyone? It is to become sons and daughters of True Parents. It is to become God's children, who can harbor eternal life and love. There is no other way. At the time of the Fall, Adam and Eve did not establish their conjugal relationship with God's permission. They did so of their own accord. The only relationship that began with God's consent was that between father and son. Yet, that was shattered, and therefore needs to be restored and rectified. (68 -138, 1973.7.29)

### Section 3. The Great Value of Human Beings

#### 3.1. Original human value is akin to that of God

How great is the value of humankind? They are the only beings that God would long for over tens of thousands of years, leaning on his walking stick. According to my observations, this fact happens to be the basis for the creation of the universe. Since God and human beings related to each other as inter-



nal and external, vertical and horizontal perspectives about the world of love could be established. Both vertical and horizontal views on the world of love can come into existence once upper-lower and left-right relationships are formed. God can come to reside in the center of them all. That place, which can bind them all into one at the deepest core of the heart, is the central place of the vertical and horizontal. If they are not bound into one, the standard of the vertical and horizontal cannot develop into the ideal form of love. The existence of the vertical form alone does not guarantee the existence of the horizontal form. Therefore, you should understand that God had no other choice but to create human beings in this form. (48-224, 1971.9.19)

As an absolute being with an absolute ideal for His creation, God pursues beings who can relate to Him with absolute value. This is something that cannot be exchanged for anything in this world. A being that can relate to God has a value that is greater than that of God Himself. The term “the value of one’s counterpart” seems difficult to comprehend. The value of a partner, of any being as a counterpart, is so great that it cannot be exchanged for anything or anyone, even for God. God cannot exchange it with Himself, for if He did, He would be left alone as a result. He would be left all by Himself.

This is why God invests Himself and exhausts His own strength and His own energy. He is engaged in a war of attrition. The forms of existence thus creat-

ed with relational value that cannot be exchanged for God Himself are human beings. The form of existence with absolute value is none other than humankind. God created people as beings of value with such an idea. (68-134, 1973.7.29)

God created humankind for the sake of love. Why were human beings created? They were created because of love. The reason human beings are different from other forms of creation is that they were created as God’s sons and daughters. They were created as object partners who can receive love directly from Him. Such is the privilege of humankind. (132-245, 1984.6.20)

Whom do human beings resemble? God. Therefore, it follows that He also desires love just as they do. In the world of the ideal of creation based on love, human beings embody God as His image and the rest of creation embodies God symbolically, according to the Unification Church’s teaching. Based on what? Love. When God rejoices, people will automatically rejoice, and when they rejoice, the creation will automatically rejoice as well. What would bring this about? Only love, nothing else can achieve this. (166-48, 1987.5.28)

When creating an object to reflect His love, whom would God make it resemble? Would He not create it to resemble Him? If He creates the object to resemble Himself, that object should have all His characteristics, both His male and female characteristics. Human



beings resemble God, and they are the substantial manifestations of His internal nature, His invisible form and His invisible mind. Hence, the Book of Genesis is correct in saying that God created human beings in His image. (170 -167, 1987.11.15)

God's invisible form is symbolically reflected in all parts of our body. Whose eyes do ours resemble? God's! Hence, when you closely study the facial features of human beings, you see that the eyes are set deeper than other features. The deep-set eyes can thus observe everything. Next, the nose symbolizes Adam and Eve. It rests at the center. Next, the mouth symbolizes all the things of creation. It is horizontal and encloses thirty-two teeth, or four times eight, based on all the things of creation in the world and the number four. Next, the ears symbolize all directions. The features found above the neck symbolize heaven. In other words, it is the information center of heaven. (201-83, 1990.3.4)

The Lord of Creation has placed every part of His form in the face of human beings. Hence, God's characteristics can all be found in the human face. The eyes symbolize God. Thus, when a being comes into existence, the first feature to develop is the eyes. Since the center of the universe is God, the eyes symbolize Him. Therefore, you can tell just by looking into the eyes of someone, indeed anyone, whether that person is conscientious or not. (39-247, 1971.1.15)

Whatever form truth may take, what

would be its core? It is not money or power or knowledge. The core of truth is love. The essence of love is vertical, and truth that embodies love is horizontal. Hence, you can know God just by looking at His creation, and since Adam and Eve were created in His image, you can know Him by looking at them. They are His object partners of vertical true love while standing as subject partners to the creation. If the love between these two, man and woman, can be made to fit together with the axis of the world through east, west, north and south, then God, the spirit world, and the entire physical world would be connected. (179-290, 1988.8.14)

You need to attain oneness with your spouse. Through the unity of subject and object partners, reproduction takes place. Only through give and take action can reproduction take place. The place where reproduction occurs is truly one of joy. Does God Himself have dual characteristics of internal nature and external form? When separate, neither can be the subject partner. Only when man and woman unite, can the subject of the couple be established. When they are united, the man automatically becomes the subject partner, even if he did not wish it to be so. (42-115, 1971.2.28)

Human beings, of their own volition, need to engage in activities that demonstrate God's original love; they need to love Him and come closer to Him. The first commandment in the words of Jesus was, "You shall love the Lord

your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind.” What comes first is to love God. You need to love Him with all your body and soul. Stopping halfway will not work. You need to go to the very end. In such a manner, you need to attain the state in which your heart reflects God’s image, with an original nature that is absolutely aligned to become one with Him. Through this, you will attain the beginning and the end of everything. The first commandment dictates this as the way to love God. (149-237, 1986.11.23)

The rhythm of delight, the rhythm that brings God and human beings together in harmony, is the expression of joy. In its presence, everything, each in its own unique form, can dance, either symbolically or substantially, in tune with that rhythm. When that happens, all creation will say, “Yes, my existence in this world is worthwhile!” To take an example, would it not be the greatest wish of even the smallest creatures in the world to be a part of the feast day celebrating the love of God and human-kind? (166-46, 1987.5.28)

The creation is the foundation on which God’s sons and daughters can be created. This foundation connects them together in a relationship. This is true of animals, as well as minerals. Positive and negative charges exist in the mineral kingdom. Stamen and pistil are found in the plant kingdom; similarly, male and female are found in the animal kingdom. The greatest masterpiece

of creation, the combination of all forms of creation brought and bound together, is the internal nature and external form of human beings. (144-236, 1986.4.25)

Then why did God create night and day? If the sun were up in the sky day in and day out, how stimulating would the morning be? People say it is a glorious morning, a bright morning, but if the sun was up there all the time, what would be so glorious and bright? It would become boring. In reality, however, everything exists to be exciting, and so it possesses a rhythm that can harmoniously bring together the stimulating symbols and forms to fulfill the undertaking of love. (124-85, 1983.1.30)

Where can you find the root of your life? It lies with unfallen parents. Then can the unfallen parents of goodness be found here? As the Lord with dual characteristics, God created the universe and human beings in His image to reflect His dual characteristics. Adam is the manifestation of His male characteristics and Eve His female characteristics. From this perspective, although we usually say, “Our Heavenly Father,” because He is just one being, the concept of God actually includes the idea of God being “Our Heavenly Father and Mother.” (140-123, 1986.2.9)

### 3.2. Human beings: temples for God to indwell

What would have happened had our first ancestors Adam and Eve not fall-

en? They would have attained oneness with God and stood in the same position as Him, inheriting and experiencing His joy in His great work of creation. Such would have been the relationship formed between God and humankind. Original, unfallen human beings would have become His temples. (54-64, 1972.3.11)

Adam and Eve were God's son and daughter; at the same time, they were also His temples. Once they had matured, that is, once the temple had been built completely, He intended to dwell in them. Then, when the fully matured Adam and Eve performed the ceremony of holy matrimony, centering on God, they would have become as one with Him. He would then have become the internal God, and human beings would have become His external form with substantial bodies.

In 1 Corinthians 3:16 it is written, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" If those who are saved by faith can become God's temples, then surely Adam and Eve, in the position of the originally intended true ancestors of humanity, should have become His temples. (54-139, 1972.3.22)

Even though God is our Father and we His children, it still feels like a relationship in which He is superior and we are inferior. At such times, what would be our thinking? We have this desire in our hearts that cries out to Him, "Father, let me have Your place for just once. I want to sit in Your place!" If He were to

answer this cry with, "No, you scoundrel, I won't allow it!" then we would be crushed. Hence, He cannot answer thus. On the contrary, He knows we have such a desire in our hearts and so encourages us with words like "Of course, by all means!" and gives up His place for us. He wants us to occupy His place while He vacates it to enter our hearts and indwell us as His temples. (54-89, 1972.3.20)

In the Bible it is written, "You are God's temple." What do these words mean? No one has succeeded in interpreting these words. They are great words. That is because, no matter how great God is, we are given the right to inherit the universe after we have formed the realm of an objective relationship of love with Him. In that relationship we can whisper words of love to each other and attain oneness with Him. Through the foundation of the principle of love, we can obtain the right of inheritance to this universe and everything in it, that is, all of the spiritual and physical worlds as created by Him. No one knows about this amazing truth. (137-67, 1985.12.18)

Adam was God's body in substantial form. 1 Corinthians 3:16 testifies to this fact with the words, "Do you not know that you are God's temple." The temple is God's dwelling place. The place in our hearts where the original love blossoms would then become the Holy of holies. God would have erected the temple of universal love in Adam's heart, expanded the power of love from there, and let the flower of love blossom. This is the

purpose for which He created Adam and Eve and blessed them to create a family that would eventually fill the whole world. (121-113, 1982.10.24)

Where is the most sacred place of all? When asked where the most holy place is, we cannot answer that it is the temple in Jerusalem. Something man-made cannot be the most holy place. God builds the greatest sanctuary, where His love can dwell. This sanctuary, however, was lost. Thus, how great is the sin of humankind? (136-310, 1985.12.29)

God created human beings as His substantial bodies. 1 Corinthians 3:16 attests to this fact, with the words, “Do you not know that you are God’s temple and that God’s Spirit lives in you?” What is the temple? It is God’s dwelling place. Adam was God’s body and Eve in the position of His wife. If they had fulfilled their destinies, their children would have been born from God’s lineage. It is the Principle that they were to be His kindred. (135-313, 1985.12.15)

What would happen to people who have reached the stage of perfection when passing into the spirit world? Adam would have become God’s body. It is alluded to both in the Gospel of John, Chapter 14 and in 1 Corinthians 3:16. We infer from these words that we are designed to be God’s temple and dwelling place. Then how can we come to resemble Him? Once we have reached the perfection level in fulfilling our portion of responsibility, He will indwell us

and all human lives will come together in oneness through love. When a man and woman come together as husband and wife and form a family, they are mutually assimilated and united in love. In the same manner, the power of love would enable us to be assimilated to God; that is, we would be as one with Him. (130-21, 1983.12.11)

When human beings have fully matured into adulthood, the invisible God can then enter them and make a love nest. He is also capable of climactic love pleasing to both Himself and Adam at the same time. Therefore, love is the greatest and most sacred temple. The word temple in Korean is *Seong Jeon*, and *Seong* (聖) is a Chinese character meaning “sacred.” Therefore, God can be found wherever there is true love.

Why do human beings like true love? Whenever they encounter true love, they know that they have met God as well. Hence, when Adam and Eve have fully matured and are making love, God, the Creator of the universe, would enter their bodies and make them into the most sacred temple of all. (128-325, 1983.10.2)

Eve is Adam’s wife. Adam is God’s substantial body. It has been said that we are God’s temple. He is the invisible Father indwelling Adam’s heart. These two fathers can then become one. They attain oneness. Thus, Adam’s standard of original nature is the starting point where the invisible spiritual world and the visible physical world come together

in unity. What is that standard of original nature? It is not a bundle of money, or greed. In the innocence of adolescence, the faculties of one's cells are fully mobilized, and that manifests as a feeler or antenna, which can later settle down once God has come to reside in him. (120-70, 1982.10.3)

1 Corinthians 3:16 states, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" This means that we are His temple. When you have attained a mystical state, and offered Him a prayer, asking, "Heavenly Father, where are You?" you will be rewarded with a wonderful answer. He will say, "I am here! What is all the fuss about? Didn't you get anything to eat for breakfast? Why are you making so much noise in the middle of the night?" When you ask, "Where are you?" He will answer, "Where else would I be? I am in the innermost depth of your heart! I am inside your heart!" Where is heaven said to be? It is in your heart. (224-214, 1991.11.24)

## Section 4. Original Human Nature and the True Lifestyle

### 4.1. Live in harmony with your original mind

The teacher closest to you is none other than your own original mind. More precious than even the closest of friends is your original mind, even more precious than your own mother or father. You need to consult your origi-

nal mind. God dwells there. You should learn to listen to what your original mind tells you. You need to enter into such a state. In Buddhist terms, you need to purify your inner nature. What Buddha meant by the words, "I am my own Lord throughout heaven and earth," is that once you look into your own heart, you will find that the Lord God dwells inside you. Nothing would be impossible. (133-178, 1984.7.10)

Loving minds always try to sacrifice, to concede, and to give, and give again. For instance, if I had ten billion dollars in my possession and went out into the street to give it all to others, I would still not have helped every person in the world, and so my mind would not rest easy in its desire to give out more. There is no end to it. God's heart is too great to be fathomed. Therefore, you cannot boast of yourselves. Even if you performed the most generous act of all, and then checked with your loving mind, it would answer, "You need to do more!" (133-180, 1984.7.10)

You need to purify your mind. You need to cleanse it. Your original mind is better than I am. It is your eternal master. Hence, you should not harbor evil thoughts in it. Instead, you should always be of the mindset to contribute to the common good from a public position. (133-178, 1984.7.10)

Looking at someone, your mind can know what kind of a person he or she is just at a glance. In a moment, you would

already have formed an opinion. Hence, the closest teacher to you is your own mind. Thus, you should not torment it. You should not make it unhappy. If you do, you make the Owner of the universe and me unhappy. Your mind is the master of your life. Consequently, when you make your mind sad, you make the master of your life sad. You should follow a path that gives it joy. (133-180, 1984.7.10)

You should set aside some time to experience joy with your mind. To others it may seem as if you are all alone, but during that time, you would become friends with your mind. Sit with your mind at some tranquil place and meditate. Then you will enter a state of deep prayerfulness. You will thus enter a world unknown to anyone else but you. You need such experiences. (133-181, 1984.7.10)

#### 4.2. Human perfection means mind-body unity

The Unification Church emphasizes a mind-body unity that can only be achieved through true love. Delving deeper into the questions of concept and reality, you will find many stories behind them. Once you clarify all these stories, you will find out that this path toward unity is the correct one; it will be borne out by experience. (227-12, 1992.2.10)

What are a righteous conscience, righteous actions, and mind-body unity based on? Words alone are not enough. Actions alone are not enough. Where is the place where complete mind-body

unity occurs? The answer lies first in achieving perpendicularity. To achieve that, establish a standard that can stand upright as the center of the worldwide horizontal plane. Become exemplary people who can be connected to the world wherever you go, be it the East or the West. You should set the standard that can be proclaimed as correct at any time in history, whether past, present or future. (205-49, 1990.7.7)

The precious value of a perfect score can be awarded to people only when they have attained oneness with true love. Mind-body unity refers to the state in which the body resonates in harmony with the conscience. When you strike one prong of a tuning fork, the other prong vibrates at the same frequency. In a similar manner, if you strike the conscience with true love, the body will resonate. Alternatively, when you strike the body with true love, the conscience will resonate. There is no need for you to be taught all this. Once you find yourself in the center of all this, you will know without being taught. (223-355, 1991.11.20)

The brave soldiers of the Unification Church must achieve mind-body unity in whatever circumstances. How can you achieve this unity during your lifetime? Those who cannot achieve it, and yet think of love and the ideal, should feel ashamed of themselves because it is contrary to God's will. The new path of hope opens only to those who wish for it after having achieved perfect mind-body unity. If you stagnate in your cur-

rent position, the path leading to God's new kingdom of hope will not open up before you. (205-45, 1990.7.7)

How do you achieve mind-body unity? Throughout history, the mind and body have been in constant conflict. If God had intended it at the time of creation, such a god would be the enemy of humankind. Bearing in mind the fact that your own mind and body are in constant conflict, if you were to ask God, "Do Your mind and body also fight each other as ours do?" what would be His response? Is there anyone who ever considered such a situation? If you were to ask God if His conscience and body were not united but instead in constant battle, He would definitely answer that it is not so. You have never attained such a state, and so there is no way for you to know, but as the founder of the Unification Church I have reached that state and can connect to Him whenever I so desire. Therefore, I can plainly answer on His behalf, that God's mind and body are completely united. (223-349, 1991.11.20)

Religious life involves having control over your body. You need to make it habitual within three to five years. If this is not the case, and after all those years you still find yourself uncomfortable, however much you desired it, you could never achieve perfect mind-body unity. My number one goal is, "Before desiring to dominate the universe, first achieve dominion over the self!" If people cannot achieve total oneness within

themselves, there is no way that they can relate to the universe, however much they may have gone around the world in their endeavors. (222-340, 1991.11.7)

The human body inherited Satan's lineage. Your conscience must attain the standard of God's conscience, developing to the top of the growth stage reached by Adam and Eve. That requires having faith. Our first ancestors were deceived by Satan, and strayed in the opposite direction due to a force stronger than their conscience, that is, the power of love. At that moment, the conscience had no choice but to follow where the body led it. It must become stronger.

Once you endow more power to the conscience than to the body, the latter, however strong, would have to obey the former. If you fail to do so, and the body remains stronger than the conscience, you will fall even lower than where you are currently situated. There are two paths lying before you.

Thus, people choose to fast, take cold showers, sacrifice, and engage in voluntary service. There is no other way. Those gathered here, do you perform these actions too? Are you following this path? Do you pledge to sacrifice and serve others even at the cost of your own lives? If so, you need to follow the path of subjugation at the risk of your lives. The path of religion is that of submission. It transcends the mind-body conflict. Unless you tread the sacrificial path, you will not be able to achieve mind-body unity. (222-333, 1991.11.7)



No matter how long you have been in the Unification Church, you should not leave your sins buried as they are. They need to be cleansed. You need to start afresh with a clean slate, be resurrected anew, and become men and women who can live in the Garden of Eden without sinning. You need the awareness of God's intention for the complete unity in love of your mind and body, as created by Him. Do you understand? Otherwise, you cannot return to the homeland.

You need to find the way back to your house in the homeland, where our original house is located, and where God, our original Parent, dwells. That is where the descendants of the nation who have the birthright of the firstborn should live and reign over all other nations based on the life of the imperial family. That place is your new home. How shall you go about finding your way back, not to your birthplace but your new homeland, the original home? First, you need to acquire the qualification to enter that homeland. In order to do so, you must achieve a realm of oneness through total mind-body unity. (233-168, 1992.8.1)

No matter how great your sin is, admit it frankly to God, saying, "Heavenly Father, I have committed such a wrong thing!" In confessing your sins to Him in your prayer, you can declare to Him, "Shouldn't the original mind, the heart of a father, the heart of a teacher, and the heart of the citizens of a nation be like this? With such a heart, I will be filial and loyal and be connected to Your love. My heart will never waver. Please

take into consideration this resolution, and forgive me for all the wrongs that I have done as I have now made this resolution. Won't you forgive me?" Then God would reply, "Hmm...." You need to know how to pray. Do you understand? (149-37, 1986.11.1)

Where on earth is God? Where would His dwelling place be? God settles in the most precious thing of all, namely love. Then if this love happened to be that between a man and a woman, where would He reside? He lives perpendicularly in the deepest part of the love that is completely united and unchanging. The central place of His residence would be the place where man and woman attain oneness.

When you reach a mystical state while praying, such that you undergo spiritual experiences, then if you call out to God, "Heavenly Father," you will hear the answer coming from inside you, "Why are you calling me? I am right here!" "Here" would be the center of your heart. He would be at the central point of love, in a perpendicular position, inside the person whose mind and body are completely united. If you consider God's point to be the intersection of two perpendicular lines, it would be a position of complete self-denial. (224-148, 1991.11.24)

When your mind and body have attained oneness, the force of the universe will protect you. In such a state, your parents, as well as your siblings, would also be protected. Everyone would



be connected to each other in such a relationship. The race and the nation must also form a relationship. This is an excellent conclusion. Thus, if you were to go to another nation, having achieved mind-body unity, you would be connected to that nation also. It will work wherever you are.

In soccer, what happens when the ball just stops rolling? At the point of contact between the two surfaces, a perpendicular axis is necessary. Hence, a sphere is considered the most ideal existence. A perpendicular axis can reside at any point on the surface. That is how the ball can roll around on it. Therefore, once your mind and body are united on a perpendicular axis, you will fit in anywhere. Regardless of whether you are a Westerner, an Oriental, a person from the past, present, or future, you can harmonize anywhere. (205-53, 1990.7.7)

### 4.3. The original mind is the teacher and closest to God

What is the mind? It is your master and teacher. Since your body resembles your mind, it is the origin of your body. Thus, on the horizontal level, the mind stands in the place of your mother and father, teachers, and masters. (222-157, 1991.11.3)

Your original mind does not need a teacher. It is your second god. Do not try to follow a teacher or me; instead, try to serve your mind. What about the mind? You wake up at daybreak, all alone, and it is so quiet that you can hear even the

squeak of a mouse or the buzz of a fly, and you think to yourself, “Well, I should like such and such a thing. I should try to do a good deed.” Your original mind will then tell you, “Good! Good! Do it now!” On the other hand, if you harbor only evil thoughts in your mind, it will chide you with words like “No! No! You fool!” Would it not know what you are thinking? Of course it knows. That is the way it is. It knows only too well. (138-124, 1986.1.19)

Have you ever considered the value of your original mind, how valuable it is of all your attributes? Whenever the body tries to do something wrong, the mind always advises it not to, and tries to block it from doing that. However, the body always attacks, ignores, treads on the mind, and it tries to do as it pleases. Have you ever taken into consideration how your mind inside your body sacrifices time and again in order to fulfill its duties as the subject partner, even amidst persecution, as your comrade and teacher until your death? (217-91, 1991.5.4)

Our master is our conscience. How many times has your conscience advised you whenever you had evil thoughts in your head? How much has it worried about how to lead you over the hill and across the river, untiringly recalling you to the right path? In this way, the conscience tries to protect you in the form of the true master. However, the treacherous body has treated this teacher contemptuously, although it was the one and only honorable teacher sent to you

by God and the universe. The body has trampled upon the conscience, which was sent on behalf of the parents in order to connect the body to the mind of original love. Do you love this body, which has become the enemy of the mind? No, you should not! (201-353, 1990.4.30)

Now the time for us to listen to someone else's words has passed. Rather than the words of a brilliant teacher thousands of times greater than you, or any other truth in the world, you should listen to the words of your original mind. No matter how much you have heard from it, you should return repeatedly to listen some more. Then you would receive something of infinite magnitude from it, something unimaginable, which would reveal the greatest secrets of the creation. (7-201, 1959.9.6)

You cannot even begin to fathom how much the conscience has sacrificed itself for the sake of the body. Do you understand the circumstances of the conscience, which has been trampled upon throughout its entire life? It is always tired because it has to manage you night and day. Yet it does not tire of preventing your body from committing any wrongful action. It tells the body, "You have done more than enough. Shouldn't you stop and listen to me now?" It is closest to you, and stands in the place of God, your parents, and teachers. It does not need to be educated. However, the body definitely requires an education. (214-282, 1991.2.3)

When you consider your body and mind, how pitiful is your original mind? It stands in God's stead. It represents all of your ancestors, your antecedents. The original mind represents the teacher as well as the ruler. Yet, it has been disrespected and treated with contempt for an endlessly long time. As the center of the universe, it stands in the position of true parents, true teachers, true masters, and the one Subject Being with true love. It sacrifices itself over and over again to save you while you live on this earth. Isn't that true? Though it sacrifices so much, has it complained even once? Although it is continuously dragged around and treated contemptuously – to the extent that one would presume it to be dead – whenever you harbor an evil thought or attempt an evil deed, it comes alive once again to advise you not to do so, calling you to your senses with the words, "Hey, you devil!"

How much have you made sport of the mind? The original mind stands in the stead of parents, teachers, and masters. In the world of the mind, there is no need to hold a court trial, because you yourselves know better than anyone else what you have done. There is no need for third party witnesses. (209-154, 1990.11.28)

No one knew that within oneself is a great teacher. The original mind stands in the stead of the great mother and father. The counsel of the mother and father is never contrary to the original mind. Whenever it counsels you, just as your mother or father would do, you should learn to obey. An orderly life

requires a moral standard that can serve as its original reference. Such a formula based on the original mind has yet to be formed. You should not torment your mind. Do any of you like having a dual personality? The original mind stands in the stead of the teacher, parents, and God. There is no teacher who can teach the mind. (207-266, 1990.11.11)

Throughout their lives, all people have within themselves the most important teacher of all. Despite this, they frequently mistreat, abuse, and trample on it. That teacher is none other than our own conscience. It always speaks to us in its efforts to help us, and tries to connect us to true love. Like our parents, it encourages us to become good and unselfish, and guides us to act according to God's will. However, within each of us is a rebel that goes against the words of the conscience. That rebel is our body. (201-208, 1990.4.9)

"Before desiring to dominate the universe, first achieve dominion over the self!" This was the motto at the time when we were pioneering the path of truth. I told everyone, "Before desiring to dominate the universe, before establishing a connection with everything in this world, first dominate the self!" (201-154, 1990.3.30)

The original mind has three great personas. It can be the master, teacher, or parent, and only when the body finds itself dissatisfied and lacking in its service towards the mind, even after serv-

ing it for tens of thousands of years, can heavenly fortune finally come and reside within you. The mind wishes to serve the body, but the body does not serve the mind. This is the problem. The problem lies within the self, not society. (201-154, 1990.3.30)

The original mind tries to protect you in the form of the true master. However, the treacherous body has treated this teacher contemptuously, though it is the one and only honorable teacher sent to you from the universe. It has trampled upon the conscience, sent in the place of parents to connect the body to the mind of original love. Do you love this body, which has become the enemy of the mind? No, you should not! Unless you stop the conflict between the mind and body, the Kingdom of Heaven can never be established. Not a single saint thought of this. (201-154, 1990.3.30)

Yin and yang, the internal nature and external form, the positive and negative are complementary; they cannot be conflicting. However, within today's fallen humanity, the voice of the mind as well as that of the body can be heard. They have not been united. How did the mind and body of man and woman, who were created to resemble God, come to be separated? This is the problem.

God is absolute, and therefore the basic human attributes of mind and body should be absolutely united and assimilated into the whole world created by Him. Together, they should act as the center of that world. Instead, however,

they were separated. How did this come about? If they were intended to separate from each other, there would be no God, and the basis for such things as ideals, unity, peace, or happiness could never be found. (195-304, 1989.12.17)

God is not far away from us, but within us. Is the original mind your master? When you attempt to carry out an evil deed in the middle of the night, the mind stands in front of you and tells you not to go. It appears whenever and wherever you are as your master; it guides you as would your mother or teacher. Hence, your body is your enemy. (201-74, 1990.3.1)

What is God like? He is both masculine and feminine, like human beings. You cannot see your mind, can you? Do you want to see it or not? The same is true of God. From the spiritual perspective, we understand that God does not have a body. This has been the case until now. Since Adam could not reach perfection, God has been dispossessed of a body. He exists instead as the mind-like master, teacher, or manager, a mind-like parent in a mind-like universe. (197-44, 1990.1.7)

Nothing can be achieved unless mind and body are united. This is what you should focus on. If something weighs on your mind during prayer, you should repent. When repenting, you should not do it alone. The four directions of north, south, east, and west need to be arranged first. You need to speak it aloud in front of those closest to you, such as your par-

ents or your teacher. After doing so, you also need to make public what you have done wrong in front of your children and students. "I have done this thing; do you think I can be forgiven?" In this manner, you need to walk a path where those closest to you can support you with one heart. Do you understand what I am trying to say? (184-301, 1989.1.1)

When can your mind and body be unified? You have never thought of this, have you? This is a very serious matter. They are engaged in a lifelong fight, and who can stop them? This is the problem. Your father or mother, your king or your teacher, even saints cannot stop it. Where is the master who can stop it? Have you ever looked for him seriously? That master is true love. (184-211, 1989.1.1)

The original mind is your watchman; it protects you night and day and gives you no rest by telling you over and over again, "Do good deeds. Do good deeds!" So, can you imagine how exhausted it must be? From the day you are born, from the day you can think for yourselves, from the day you acquire intellectual faculties to analyze every situation in society, the conscience follows you around until death and tells you what to do forever. This is something that not even your own teacher, your mother, or father can do. It tells you to take after God, the saints, the patriots, and the children of filial piety. It orders you to resemble them all and keeps saying, "You, the body, should take after me!" (179-311, 1988.8.14)

Mind-body unity can be brought about only through true love. Hence, the mind sacrifices itself for the sake of the body and forgets it has done so, repeatedly. The original mind stands in God's stead, and is the teacher of all teachers for you. Your original mind is your center, dispatched by God on His behalf. It is the vertical you. (226-60, 1992.2.1)

## Section 5. The Path of True People

### 5.1. The path people should seek

When people follow their original mind, the whole universe will open up before them. Something must bring this about. Once they enter such a state of being, they will be able to converse with their mind. They will be able to hold a conversation with their mind. As soon as they think of doing something, the answer will already be right in front of them. They are advancing towards such a state. Would not such people know the path they should take? The way they should go definitely would be laid down before them, and so all the forces in the universe would help them follow it. Though they may have been dragged into the circumstances of being tested, once they are there, everything will aid them. Only then would they be able to do great things. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

Those whose lives are under girded by great power are true people. True people have a background of infinite power that propels them forward in the

direction they wish to take. They would know in a second if the direction were wrong. The Unification Church that you know is not a worthless church. It has a deep and high background, a background of great force backing it up. As such, once you have risen to such a level through your own efforts, everything would be taken care of thenceforth. In this aspect, you need to decide on the direction you should take by yourselves. This is something you alone must determine. It is something you know best. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

You must find the way you should go. Would money solve all problems? No, it would not. There will be times when you need money and other times when you will have to follow another path. Hence, you need to decide your own path. You need to look deep inside your mind and consider the intrinsic qualities you were born with originally, and by considering them, you should decide the future purpose that you will pursue. Though God may point you in the right direction, it is up to you to follow it of your own accord. (120-298, 1982.10.20)

The influence of a magnet is stronger than the gravitational pull of the earth. What makes such an influence possible? The actual force of a magnet is weaker than the gravitational pull of the earth, but when the two forces come together, the former surpasses the latter. The same is true of our conscience. From your birth, you already know the background against which you were born.

This is something that only you can know. If you are unable to discern and pass judgment on such things, you will never be able to do great things. (120-301, 1982.10.20)

You might look at nature and say, "Oh, I don't need the four seasons. I only need spring; I hate summer, autumn, and winter!" But, if you were to ask God, He would answer, "I love all four seasons." Hence, you need to learn to love summer, autumn, and winter, even though you may have hated them to begin with. When the winter snow comes, God looks upon the world covered in white and derives pleasure from it. Therefore, you should say, "Oh, I love it too!" That is the way it should be. (133-29, 1984.7.1)

You should be able to look at nature with a mind similar to that of God. Such should be your mindset. If there is a rainstorm or streaks of lightning, do not say things like, "Oh man, I hate that!" because God experiences them thinking, "Ha ha, they are kissing and making love!" He scolds those who say they do not like them, "Stop that, you fools! You rascals!" (133-29, 1984.7.1)

You should love people and you should love all five skin colors equally. Would God say something like, "Oh, I only love the whites?" If He only loved white, then everyone would have to wear white clothes. All white people would have to wear white. They would have to throw away all their colored clothes. They would not wear black. They would

not wear any other colors. That is contradictory. When you enter their rooms, you will see all kinds of colors. You will see pianos there. Would they have only white pianos, or would some be black? Why would they have blackboards? Such people should not have nights. Nights are dark, so they should not have them. Why, why is everything centered on the whites? What is white supremacy? It is the road to ruin. How many years do you think it will last? How long? Though the winter may be long, it only lasts three months. For the sake of eternity, you must love all four seasons. As such, you should not love only white people. (133-29, 1984.7.1)

God's love encompasses all of His creation and humankind, not to mention people of the past, present, and future. Hence, He is heading a movement to liberate even those spirits in hell. People must walk the paths of truth, life, and love. No matter how great they are, if they do not live for the sake of others, nobody will follow them. Those who do will naturally become leaders. They become people of true life. (133-30, 1984.7.1)

You yourselves should know which way you must go. Once you have set a direction, you should invest all your energy into following it. You should invest everything to such an extent that you would be too exhausted to even open your eyes or be sensitive to sounds around you. (120-315, 1982.10.20)

If you have led a proper religious life

in the Unification Church, you already know what you should do. On the other hand, those who live self-centeredly and act in their own interests will have no idea. When a storm is coming, the rats aboard a ship sense it, and know that the ship will be destroyed. Therefore, before it lifts anchor, they abandon the ship by climbing over the ropes to the harbor and to safety. If rats can sense danger, human beings should surely sense it too. They should know where they have to go.

The ants know when a rainy season is about to set in. I once witnessed a colony of ants moving to another place in single file; that showed they knew the onset of the rainy season. It is because you are given to daydreaming that you do not know. Not having any idea about your own field of mission is a serious problem. You need to come to an understanding with God with regard to the serious problems in your life. You also need to adapt yourself to the environmental circumstances of your own accord. Who else can do it for you? You are the only ones who can do it. (120-298, 1982.10.20)

When people are self-assured, there is a place deep within their hearts where the mind can be at ease. Your mind should find its way to that place. Once it has slept off some of the weariness, it will become sensitive again. If you seize that moment to focus your mind, with no other thoughts in your head, you will be able to find out everything. Hence, you need to meditate and pray. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

Even I pray and offer devotions. You need to offer devotions always. They are not something you can offer just once and then put aside for some other time. You need to whet a knife all the time. If you used it and did not sharpen it, what would happen? In order to keep it sharp, you always need to whet it. In the same manner, if you lost your temper, you need to sharpen your senses once again. That is the problem. You need to calm yourselves and set your minds at ease. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

When you reach the center of the realm of heart, you will find it in motion up and down. You will be in motion automatically. This realm is inhaling and exhaling. Did you know that even the Earth breathes? It inhales and exhales, moving almost a meter with each cycle. It is regulating itself. In the same manner, the core of the realm of heart also moves up and down centering on its axis. It is in motion. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

All beings have something elliptical about them. Thus, when you enter the center of the mind or heart, you can feel an infinite force reverberating in it. Therefore, if you make a perpendicular line, you can maintain the infinite force at right angles. Hence, you need to cultivate your spiritual senses. You need to devote yourself to experiencing the deep spirit world from all aspects of life on earth. You need to do that to tap into a driving force that will fuel you throughout your lifetime. (120-308, 1982.10.20)



Even I give serious thought to my work if it is so great that it requires a power greater than my innate power. When it is necessary to acquire a force greater than my own, where I can get that power from remains the problem. If I fail to acquire such a power, there is no choice but to retreat, but that is not an option. That is why we need to pray, and we need God. That is why we need the world of heart. There are no limits in the world of love, no matter how much you pull out from it. The world of substance ends at some point, as does the world of knowledge. The world of power can be destroyed in a second, but the world of heart is endless. Hence, you need to act based on the world of heart. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

God is not a dictator. He invested Himself for human beings. He exists for their sake. Hence, people have tried to follow Him for tens of thousands of years and still do. In order to maintain one's position of being in front of the universe, which follows the heavenly way of existing for the sake of others, you also need to exist for others. By living for the sake of others, East and West, and past and present can be connected. God has the same love now as He had in the past, He loves East and the West equally, and so the differences between them can be overcome, just as with the past, present, and future. What this means is that because the differences between past, present, and future can be overcome, development can take place, and since those between East and

West can be overcome, the two can be unified. All this is made possible only through love. (187-89, 1989.1.6)

When you insist on yourself, you destroy yourself, your reciprocal partner, and God; in fact, you completely alienate yourself. From such a place, a theory of unity cannot be discovered. These words may sound simple, but their simplicity does not make them any less important. At the very end of our search for the ideal, at the ultimate end, what is required is to be vertically united with God's love, and in order to have that vertical standard pull you faster towards the goal, you need to live for the sake of others. Complete unity can be achieved only at the place where you live for the sake of others. (187-89, 1989.1.6)

How is unity achieved? How shall I achieve unity? Through what? Through brute force, power, money, authority, or knowledge? Everything can be resolved only at a place based on love. Isn't this conclusion simple? The conclusion is that the satanic world can be re-created into God's Kingdom only by living for the sake of others with true love. This is only logical. (182-134, 1988.10.16)

## 5.2. The way true human beings should go

Anything that engages in action for its own sake brings about evil. Anything that acts for the greater good brings about development. You should



bear this in mind. When you live for the greater good, all doors will open before you. The individual, family, tribe, race, world and heaven, in fact, the path of love and all other paths in the world will open their doors wide before you and welcome you. So what would be this path? We need to consider this. Thus, the Unification Church teaches that to live for the sake of others is a principle of heavenly law. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

Where does the path of true life lead? We must establish as a public law the heart to live for the sake of others. This law is everlasting because it is a principle that is true wherever you go. It was also true in the past, it is true in the present, and it will be true in the future, that you should live for the sake of others. If God were to appear in front of the saints and sages like Jesus, Mohammed, Buddha, and Confucius, and ask them, "What is your opinion with regard to this?" Would they answer, "That law is right." or would they answer, "That law is wrong." Of course, they will say that it is right. It is the law of the universe. It is a law that enables people to live truthfully. Such is the true path laid out before you. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

In order to become a world figure, what should you do? Basing your life on ethics and morality is not enough. Basing your life on people is not enough. If you do that, you will never be able to transcend the nation. What would enable you to transcend the nation lies with God. Without a cosmic ideology,

you cannot transcend the nation. (38-260, 1970.1.8)

Saints introduced to the world the best of humanity and God. When you consider the people counted as saints of the world, did they worship God or not? Is there anyone who ever became a saint without God? (39-316, 1971.1.16)

Moreover, the saints taught not only the moral principles of humanity, but also God's moral principles. (33-291, 1970.8.21)

Those who live for and love their parents in their families are filial children, those who live for and love their nation are patriots, and those who love the world are saints. Then what is it that I have been teaching you? It is to become God's divine sons and daughters, who love Him, the world, and the universe. What will you become? Will you become God's divine sons and daughters, or filial sons and daughters? In order to become them all, you need to maintain in your heart a godly love. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

God had no choice but to endow human beings, who live a short lifetime on earth, with the very best motto and the very best task to fulfill. Therefore, He gave them the motto "Love God more than anything else" as a task for them to accomplish. By doing so, people can become His children, which is unprecedented in history. On the day you become His children, it is understood that you would also be perfected

as saints, patriots, and children of filial piety. You would have become all of them perfectly. Once you have done so, you would not only stand in the position of victory in your own family, but you would also become the victors on the national and global foundations. (100-157, 1978.10.9)

What is it that the Unification Church seeks to accomplish? It is not seeking to make great people out of anyone, but to make us all into saints. Great people have enemies before them, but saints do not. Great people love only their own race, but saints love all humankind. Therefore, if great people sought to stand before God, He would tell them, “You loved your race, but you failed to love all of the world’s people, whom I sought and loved, didn’t you,” and then those people would not be able to stand in His presence. On the other hand, those who have fulfilled the duties of saints can go directly into His presence. What is the Unification Church seeking to accomplish? Is it trying to create great people or saints? (38-263, 1971.1.8)

What kind of a being is God, who created the universe and established universal laws? He stands in the representative position of living for the sake of others more than anyone else does in the universe. Such a being is God. Therefore, in order to meet Him, you need to live for the sake of others. Though He is the King of knowledge, He does not expect you to come before Him with knowledge. Though He is the King of ability,

He does not ask you to come before Him with ability. Though He is the Master and the King of authority, money, and materials, He does not ask you to bring these things to Him. Instead, He tells you that anyone and everyone can come before Him by living for the sake of others. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

### 5.3. The rationale for establishing the law of living for the sake of others

We can discern that words like love, ideals, happiness, or peace cannot be realized individually. These are words that can only be realized through relationships; thus, even God, the Absolute Being, cannot achieve the happiness, peace, and ideal that He desires on His own. Until now, we did not comprehend that the object through which His ideals, love, happiness, and peace can be fulfilled is none other than humankind. What would be the use of His loving if He were alone? What would be the use of His ideals if He had no one with whom to share them? Therefore, it is reasonable to conclude that these conditions cannot be met without going through a relationship with humankind. (75-315, 1975.1.16)

Between subject and object partners, where would God, the King of wisdom and the center of the cosmos, place the origin of true love, ideals, happiness, and peace? In this question lies a great dilemma. On the one hand, there is the subject partner, while on the other hand, there is the object partner; between the

two paths, one for the sake of the subject partner and the other for the sake of the object partner, where are conditions for the ideal to be found? This question cannot but pose a serious dilemma for God the Creator.

God had to consider, concerning true ideal, true love, and true peace, whether He should set the subject partner as the center and place the root of the ideal in the object partner's living for the sake of the subject partner; or set the object partner as the center and place the root of the ideal in the subject partner's living for the sake of the object partner. After considering, God decided that if He were to place the subject partner as the root of the ideal, not only God Himself, but all people in the world would require the object partner to live for them; in other words, all would seek to become subject partners and not object partners.

If this were the case, the path to unity would be blocked. You need to understand this. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Where is the path leading to unity and the origin of peace? God had no choice but to establish the principle that not only Himself, but also all human beings need to live for the sake of others. Hence, true love, as well as true ideal, true peace, and true happiness, can only be achieved by living for the sake of others; they cannot be found in any other case. Until now, human beings have not known that this is a fundamental law of the creation of the universe. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Why were men and women born? Men were born not for themselves but for women, and vice versa. Neither was born for themselves. Though they were not born for themselves, they are in fact asserting their own desires. This ideology focusing on "I myself" should be demolished. Once it is demolished, the world can be unified. (61-266, 1972.9.1)

Those who pursue their value with their reciprocal partners rather than themselves as the focus – in other words, focusing on their partner as the standard – are not unhappy people. Anywhere and anytime, their foundation of heart has a realm that includes the partner, and so wherever they may be, they will not be lonely, but happy. (59-200, 1972.7.16)

Why did God have no choice but to set the principle of existing for the sake of others? Before I answer that question, let me ask you another. If someone sacrificed 100 percent for you at the risk of his life, would your original mind tell you to return his kindness with only 50 percent, whilst keeping the other 50 percent in your pocket, or would it tell you to repay him with everything you have? How does our original mind work? It wants to repay with a greater amount.

If you realized that he did what he did for you with a true and earnest heart, you would wish to repay him with more than 100 percent. If the 100 percent given were requited with 110 percent, then that 110 percent would be requited with 120 percent because the return was just as true and earnest as the first act. In this

process, the concept of eternity can be established. This is how eternity originates. Hence, such a principle had to be established in the very beginning, so that development and prosperity could take place. (73-326, 1974.8.10)

Even though the ideal and love are more precious than life to human beings, the people of today believe that such things come from themselves. This misunderstanding must be cleared up. Where do love and the ideal come from? They come from one's reciprocal partner. That being the case, a law of living for the sake of others needed to be established. Since God, who is the King of wisdom, anticipated the present consequences, He could not help but establish such a law. (73-326, 1974.8.10)

The concept of eternity is impossible when everyone lives for his or her own sake. When you see an object in motion, you can discern that the greater the pushing and pulling force between the reciprocal partners, the faster it moves. The reason God, the King of wisdom, established the law of living for the sake of others was to make the existence of eternity possible. (75-322, 1975.1.16)

I know that many among us think that we would rather die than be under someone else's control. In fact, you can see this tendency in the highly educated strata of society more than anywhere else. Nevertheless, people have been happy in times past when they were under the sovereignty of someone who lived for

their sake. When you look at the structure of the spirit world, you will see that God is the great Sovereign of the cosmos, as well as the central being, existing in the heart of everything in the universe. You, however, have no idea how blissful it is to be ruled by Him. Since He knew that the ideal realm of unity, in which we would be grateful even if He governed us eternally could be established at such a place, God had no choice but to establish the principle of living for the sake of others. (75-322, 1975.1.16)

Love does not begin from the self. Without our reciprocal partner, we cannot find love and the ideal, which are more precious than life itself. We did not realize this until now. The being in whom we find this precious love and ideal and through whom we receive it, is our reciprocal partner. In order for us to reach the state where we can humbly accept this precious love and ideal, we need to live for the sake of others; hence, God had to establish the principle of living for the sake of others. (75-322, 1975.1.16)

Love cannot be fulfilled alone. Where does it arise? It does not come from the self, but from one's object partner. That being the case, you need to bow to and live for the sake of your object. This is where the heavenly law dictating, "Live for the sake of others" emerges. A very precious thing is coming to you, and in order to receive it, you need to respect and live for the sake of the giver. Only when you practice altruism can you receive love. (143-277, 1986.3.20)

True love is the love that gives, forgets that it has given, and gives once again. False love is the love that gives as part of a transaction to make a profit, the love that tells the receiver, "Since I gave you so much, you should give me more in return." Such is the love of Satan.

(138-172, 1986.1.21)

Our original homeland is a place that only welcomes those who lived for God, a place where only those who were born, lived, and died for others can enter. This is the fundamental nature of our original homeland. Therefore, God raised up many religions throughout the course of history to train people to seek the original homeland.

Religion has historically taught people to be meek and humble and to sacrifice because such are the laws of the spirit world. Since human beings are destined to pass on to the spirit world, religion had to train them in prepara-

tion for that world while they were still on earth. Hence, the more advanced religions emphasize a higher level of sacrifice and service in order to raise people to be aligned with the spirit world through their daily lives. (75-320, 1975.1.16)

People in this world often ask, "Oh! What is life?" The immediate issue lies in establishing a view of life, the nation, the world, the universe, and consequently, God. How should they be established? Most important is the question of how to create a system of priorities in life and how all external things can be connected to that system.

Nevertheless, based on the principle of living for the sake of others, the most valuable view of life would be that you exist for all humanity, the whole world, the nation, society, family, spouse, and children. To be able to create happiness from such a position reflects the best outlook on life. (75-323, 1975.1.16)

## CHAPTER TWO

# A Perspective on the Family

### Section 1. What Is an Ideal Family?

#### 1.1. Why is the family valuable?

The family is the starting point where God's ideal can be manifested, as well as the happiness of humanity. It is the place where all individuals can have their efforts brought to fruition, and where all of God's work is fulfilled. Why is the family good? It is because the family is the base for all free activities based on parental love. (Blessed Family - 934)

An ideal family is a place where a God-centered eternal parental love; eternal conjugal love; and eternal filial love can be found. (90-201, 1977.1.1)

Everyone must have a family. A family is composed of parents, children, and their possessions. What entities can manifest the substantial horizontal development of the vertical history of the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages? The creation, the children and the parents – that is to say, parents, their children, and their possessions. Each one of them is required in order to form a family. (29-157, 1970.2.27)

The ideal of the Unification Church does not lie elsewhere. The beginning as well as the conclusion is in the family. Until now, not one person has been able to solve the problem of human happiness, and that is why it has been sought after more than ever. Since happiness lies there, and because it has proved its infinite value in its systematized and universalized form, Unificationism came to be officially recognized. Therefore, if everyone in the world without exception comes to bow their heads and admit that they like this ideology, the world will automatically achieve unity. (26-103, 1969.10.18)

The sixty-six books of the Bible all express the hope for ideal families. What is it that men desire? It is to be married to an ideal wife. If there is any man who claims that is not the case, he cannot claim to be a man. The most fervent desire of women since their birth is to meet ideal husbands. No matter how great a woman is in the world, no matter whether she is a college graduate or holds a doctorate, her greatest desire would be to meet an ideal man. It would be to meet an ideal man whom she can love, and with whom she can have beloved sons and daughters. This

is the root of happiness. Since the doctrine of the Unification Church has been deeply embedded in such a family, no one would be able to remove it. (26-103, 1969.10.18)

Where is the Kingdom of Heaven first established? It first emerges in our families. Then what term can be given to our belief? It is the Way of the Family. We actually advocate a cosmos-centered ideology (*cheonju-ju-ui*); the Chinese character for *cheon* (天) means heaven and that for *ju* (家) means home. Hence, this cosmos-centered ideology is an ideology centered on the heavenly home. I need to provide a detailed explanation in order to clarify the meaning of the word “cosmos.” (26-103, 1969.10.18)

The family is a miniature nation grounded within a small social unit. It is a miniature nation, world, and cosmos. Therefore you cannot do anything if you abandon your family. The Unification Church is great in that it teaches people these things about the family. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

The family is the everlasting origin and base. This fact cannot be changed by the father or the elder brother, indeed, by any system in the nation or the world. Furthermore, this fact cannot be changed by heaven and earth, or even by God Himself. That is why the word “revolution” will never have any meaning for the family. (25-87, 1969.9.30)

The most important times in a per-

son’s life are in the moments of birth, marriage, and death. Then how should one be born? They should be born well, or as we would say in the Unification Church, be born through the bond of heart. The next important moment is that of marriage. We marry in order to live a full life. Simply put, we marry in order to achieve the four-position foundation. Only when such public laws of the universe are established on earth can God’s will, as well as the will of humankind, be fulfilled. The family is the place where we can find the structure and contents required by these universal law. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

The world develops resembling the structure of a family. This always holds true no matter what state the world is in. The ideal world of the future, therefore, must be established based on the trinity of the family. Then what is the purpose of Creation? It is to complete the four-position foundation. Since human beings need to complete the four-position foundation, everyone should marry and form a family.

Human beings must take after God, and a society based on human beings must take after them, centering on God. I founded the Unification Church in order to make this come true. The whole world should already have developed to such a state, but it is not the case yet. However, through such principles, the world can ultimately come to resemble human beings centered on God. An ideal world is where the whole world is molded in the image of an ideal person.



It is a world that transcends nations and races. (26-190, 1969.10.25)

The family is the horizontal foundation in the form of a miniature world. From the family stems the nation and the world. What is the family? The family is the horizontal miniature of the world and is the objective standard to the absolute center. Then what are individuals? They are the stepping-stones on which the absolute center can reside. (26-258, 1969.11.9)

The absolute authority to judge this world cannot be bestowed on an individual alone. It needs to be bestowed on a true family. What would Satan attack first? It would be the family. That is why if you have formed a family but failed to unite into one, the family breaks up. A break-up between father and son, husband and wife, and indeed, the whole family, will result. A person who has formed a family only to see it break up later is scarred with a wound that cannot be healed for eternity. No amount of consolation would do that person any good. (30-85, 1970.3.17)

We need to become parents, husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters united within the family that God has yearned for. (24-306, 1969.9.7)

Why is the family good? It is because the family provides an environment in which you can share love with each other freely. That is why people miss their hometown and their home, where their

parents and siblings live. (38-328, 1971.1.8)

When the father is pleased, the whole family is pleased; when the mother is pleased, the whole family is pleased; and even when the child is pleased, again the whole family is pleased. The family is where the whole universe can experience joy simultaneously. (30-85, 1970.3.17)

You need to gain control of your body and mind and become a perfected individual. Then the husband and wife need to become one in order to form a perfected family. (30-246, 1970.3.24)

When the mother and father become as one, that family can develop further, and when the children and parents become as one, that family can flourish on a higher level. Then what will happen if families unite with their relatives? Then a new spirit among the people will emerge. When they seek to attain yet a higher level, they will bring about the unity of the entire nation, and will be remembered forever as a clan of loyal patriots. (74-313, 1975.1.1)

A family of God's Kingdom cannot be formed forcibly; rather, it happens naturally where there is joy. Even when loving, one should not strive merely to receive; ideal love is established only when there is giving and receiving between the two. (66-123, 1973.4.18)

A happy family is one in which the husband comes home after work and discusses with his wife everything that



happened to him during the day, and plans new areas to pioneer with her. A happy family is one that strives continuously to discover new things. When parents set such an example, the children want to contribute too; they will gladly align themselves to making such a family. (29-113, 1970.2.25)

The true family is the place where a husband sacrifices for and loves his wife as his mother, and where a wife sacrifices for and loves her husband as her father. Also, they should love each other as younger sister and older brother respectively. Heaven is where ideal families live in a world where husbands and wives love and respect each other as they would God. Such a tradition should be established on earth. (Blessed Family - 920)

The mother and father cannot become as one without love. Why do you like love? It is because you are destined to like it, even if you don't want to. The greater love the mother and father have for each other rather than for themselves, the more ideal it would be. The bond of love is what binds the mother and father completely into one. Metal chains rust and finally break with time, but the bond of love is eternal.

Parents and children cannot be bound together with food or money. It is only through the love between the parents and children that they can be bound together. (18-329, 1967.8.13)

A family formed on a foundation that cannot be affected by the elements

of revolution would not be absorbed by any philosophies' or ideologies. Rather, that family would control and surpass them. A family with such a standard would be eternally unchanging, even after decades, centuries, and millenniums, and would maintain the form of a race and nation. (25-87, 1969.9.30)

What would be inside a package of love? When you unwrap the package of love after reaching the homeland, an ideal husband or ideal wife would come out. Moreover, that package would contain a pouch filled with blessings from which would spring out an ideal family. Out of that pouch would come the highest level of restoration. Consequently, the individual, family, tribe, race, nation and world would all be at this highest level. If everyone were in such a state, no one would be above or below anyone else. Therefore the brothers and sisters as well as the family itself would be restored. In order to lay such a foundation for unity, a package of love, like a treasure chest, is required. (19-295, 1968.3.10)

## 1.2. The family gives birth to the love for society, nation, and humanity

Once your mind and body are united centered on God, circular motion manifests in all sorts of forms and figures. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents loving them. In a family that is united into one in love in that way, the love within the family blos-

soms. Then that love becomes the love within a society, and then the love within a nation. In this way, it later becomes the love of the whole world. However, these days, these things have become very much obscured. (28-170, 1970.1.11)

How should love be between siblings? Based on what standard should they love each other? Siblings should love one another as their father and mother love them. From whom should they learn to love? They should learn from their parents. (66-120, 1973.4.18)

Ideal love is realized in the family. However, God could not have true sons and daughters. As there were no true brothers and sisters or husband and wife, He could not become their Parent. Therefore, it is God's will to fulfill all these things. Only at such a place would love dwell. People would abandon everything they have in the world to find their way to the place where such a love could be found. (19-314, 1968.3.17)

What is true love? It is parental love, conjugal love, and filial love put together. Without a tradition of sacrificing for each other, love cannot last for a long time and would disappear. Since parents sacrifice themselves for their children, the bond of love they have for their children cannot break. The sons and daughters who grew up receiving true love from their parents can only be filial to them. When the husband and wife try more and more to live sacrificially for each other, thinking in their hearts, "You have lived for

my sake," their family will receive blessings from heaven. Such families are the dwelling place sought after by God. (43-323, 1971.5.2)

Who is the most valuable in a family? The children are not the most valuable. Then in a given family, who is of the highest value? It is the parents. Take yourself as an example. Authority, knowledge, honor and money may be precious to you, but none of them are more valuable than your parents. Next in value would be your spouse and finally your children.

Is there in fact anything more valuable than your parents, spouse or children? No, there is no such thing. Then why do we value our parents, spouse and children so highly? It is because we have love for them.

Parental love is absolutely necessary for the children. Conjugal love is absolutely necessary between a husband and wife. The sibling love between brothers and sisters, and filial piety toward parents, are also absolutely necessary in a family. (Blessed Family - 915)

Who do you like most in your family? Your parents, right? Why do you like them the most? It is because they are in the closest position among those with whom you can sustain a love relationship throughout your entire life. The one you love next best would be your spouse. If the love shared in the relationship between a husband and wife is not a conditional love, but an unconditional love, then that love would be the best

thing in a family, bringing happiness and harmony. This is the case even if that love may not be directly related with the eternal love of God. Finally, there is filial love for the parents. If children can sacrifice for and love their parents in a bright and positive manner, while longing for an ideal environment in which they can bloom as the hope of the future, their love will be a pure and sincere contribution to their own happiness. A family in complete possession of the true parental love, true conjugal love, and true filial love will be the most ideal in the world. (Blessed Family - 914)

In a family, who is at the center? The person who is the oldest member of the family, that is, if the great grandfather is still living, he would be the center of the family. If the other members of the family choose to ignore him, just because he will soon pass away, it would be the same as ignoring the vertical world. Even if he became senile, he should still be the center of that family. As such, he should be the first to be served at mealtime. Even if your father were the president of that nation, your grandfather should still be served first. This is because the son represents the horizontal position. (34-242, 1970.9.13)

Where does unhappiness stem from? It first starts with the loss of the love nest. A happy family is where the children live with and attend their parents, who safeguard the household. A family where the parents, who represent God, are attended as the upper level, while

on the horizontal level two strangers representing two separate families come together in union as husband and wife, bound together in love, abiding by the heavenly principle and carrying on the family line, is such a family. (19-305, 1968.3.10)

A family must have parents, spouse and children. Only then can that family provide the grounds for happiness. It cannot be doubted that the purpose for God's yearning for humankind is to find His own happiness. In His search for the basis of happiness, God cannot fulfill this ideal without human beings. Only when He forms a relationship with humankind can He have a place of emotional harmony. Just as we feel joy when we are emotionally content in our own homes, God wishes to feel the same from such a position. (32-198, 1970.7.15)

Even if a person has everything he could ever desire in this world, and is singing with joy, these external things cannot bring about happiness. They could be the conditions to find happiness, but they cannot be happiness itself.

Then what would determine whether you feel happiness or not? In order to feel happiness, you need to have loving parents, a spouse, and children. Not one person on earth can deny this truth. If a person has fulfilled only one of those conditions, he would not be able to help but feel sad and discontent proportionate to what is missing. (21-140, 1968.11.17)

What was God's ideal for the first human ancestors? It was for man and woman to come together in union to form an ideal family. The center of an ideal family would be neither the man nor the woman. A family is a unit connected to each other by the bond of parent to child and the bond of a husband and wife, all centered on God's love. Therefore, we can conclude that God's will is to perfect a family centering on His love. (Blessed Family - 301)

The ideal family is the place where the parents, children, husband and wife, and brothers and sisters desire to unite into oneness based on true love. From such a place the eternal global equalization begins, and consequently, the God's Kingdom on earth, followed automatically by God's Kingdom in heaven. (300-226, 1999.3.14)

As God is the original substance of true love, when one gets connected to true love everyone becomes part of one body. Parents are gods living in God's stead on earth, husband and wife are mutual counterpart gods, and sons and daughters are little gods. A family structure comprising three generations centering on true love in this manner is the basis of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without achieving such a foundation, the kingdom cannot be established.

The family is the center of the universe. The perfection of the family is the basis for the perfection of the universe, and so if there is love in a family and love for the universe, you can freely go

anywhere. In this case, God stands in the combined central position of love as the Parent of the whole universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

Man's love, woman's love, son's love, daughter's love, parents' love and God's love are all included in the original ideal family foundation. Whoever loves their parents, spouse and children in such harmonized circumstances leads a heavenly life. (Blessed Family - 946)

There is a saying to the effect, "All is well if there is harmony within the family." If peace reigns in a family everything will go well. A perfected family is the family of peace which forms the basis of God's Kingdom. The driving force of a family is true love. Loving God more than yourself and loving your spouse more than life itself; true love is such pure and beautiful love. God did not create a force greater than the power of true love in the universe. True love is God's love. (219-118, 1991.8.28)

A human being should be part of a parent-child relationship, as well as a husband and wife and sibling relationships. These three relationships should meet at one point. There can be only one central point. That means the central point of upper and lower, left and right, and front and rear should be one and the same. If the central point is different for each of them, the balance of the three relationships would be broken.

In the end, seven points, composed of above, below, left, right, front, rear,

and finally the central point, would be formed. The significance of fulfilling the number seven is that the seven points have become as one in perfected true love, centering on God, thus achieving a perfect sphere forming a family that manifests harmony and peace. (287-21, 1997.8.10)

## Section 2. The Family Is the Basic Unit of Heaven

### 2.1. Family is the cornerstone of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven

Heaven must be established from the family. Since Jesus couldn't form a family, he could not enter heaven, but instead is in paradise. Paradise is like the waiting room you have to pass through before entering heaven. Hell came into existence because of the Fall. God did not create it from the beginning. (21-199, 1968.11.20)

The four-position foundation is the cornerstone of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. One individual cannot establish it by himself. Accordingly, Jesus cannot establish it alone; the Holy Spirit must descend. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

The starting point of heaven is not the individual or nation. It is the family. That is why Jesus will descend to earth in his quest for a bride. Is an individual the starting point of heaven? No, the family is the starting point. (30-83, 1970.3.17)

The family is the basic unit in building God's Kingdom. Once you enter God's Kingdom, you would never want to leave, because "the One" with whom you want to meet tens and even hundreds of times dwells there. If all humankind had a common desire to enter there, and wanted to meet and live with Him, the world could be unified right away.

The Unification Church is heading towards that destination. However, that cannot be established all at once. First the foundation of the individual must be laid, followed by the foundation of the family, expanded into the tribe, nation, and world. (12-180, 1963.4.1)

The Kingdom of Heaven in a family is established when man and woman are completely united. The individual heaven is realized when mind and body form oneness. Husband, wife and children should be united centering upon God's will in the heavenly kingdom. The heavenly kingdom in the family has all of humankind as its focus, and the center of its will is God.

Therefore, the heavenly kingdom in the family is to be realized where a family lives for humankind, centering upon God. We have to work not just for God alone, but for all humankind centering on Him. He desires to establish such a family. Unless this is done before restoring the world, humankind, nations, and families cannot be saved.

You must understand that Blessed Families were established in order to make such families. (100-310, 1978.10.22)

The four-position foundation in the Unification Principle refers to the domain of three-generational love. When three generations live together happily in harmony, the ideal of creation is realized. Of course, husband and wife should love each other. In addition, they should pray for their children with love and take sincere care of them in order to create a happy and harmonious family. When this is accomplished vertically through three generations and connected horizontally through brothers and sisters, then perfect love is established. Even cousins and second cousins should become as one in love to form the perfect spherical shape of love. (Blessed Family - 947)

The family and God's Kingdom are the same in form. There are parents, husband and wife, children, and brothers and sisters in a family. The family can be united through love. On this foundation, unification can be established, life can be connected, and the ideal can be realized in a family. Therefore, you become qualified to enter God's Kingdom when you can respect conjugal and parental love.

Grandparents bequeath love to parents and the parents bequeath love to their children. If any one of these fails to happen God's Kingdom cannot be established. You should love your parents more than your spouse and you should love your grandparents more than your parents. This motto is the core and the ideal of God's Kingdom.

(Blessed Family - 946)

What is the world of God's ideal of creation? It is where God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven is established through the realm of true parents. God's Kingdom is established only through the foundation of love. No one has received the love of true parents in the fallen world; there is no trace of it. The same is true for the spirit world, because there has been no one who experienced the love of true parents on earth before passing away. In the original family foundation, the love of a man, woman, son, daughter, parents and God are all included. Whoever loves their parents, spouse and children in such harmonized circumstances leads a life of heaven. (Blessed Family - 946)

Where is the Kingdom of Heaven? It doesn't just drop from the sky. It is the place where we develop a living tradition of giving and receiving between the father, mother and children. It is where we experience complete joy in utilizing the creation in our daily lives to create an ideal environment. (Blessed Family - 945)

I feel that from now on I should teach you the code of conduct for Blessed Families, the code you should follow as you lead a life as families of God's Kingdom. Those who are walking the course of restoration have someone to teach them based on the Principle, and so should learn from them. The age in which I myself take responsibility for such problems has already past.

Each and every one of the families needs to be set in order. The Unification Church is a family-based organiza-

tion. That means we place families first. In the past, individuals were considered the most important but now we must prioritize the family over them. (22-334, 1969.5.11)

The day that humanity meets the Messiah will come only after passing through the Ages of the Word and the Substance. Only after that day has arrived can humanity begin life in the Kingdom of Heaven.

By that time, you will have to attain such a state that his mind, heart and state can become your mind, heart, and state, so that his difficulties and his sufferings can also be your own. Only when you attain such a state and feel that his heart and mind is one with your heart and mind can you become families of the Kingdom of Heaven. Only when this is completed on earth can the families of the Kingdom of Heaven be established. (19-251, 1968.1.15)

Where does the life of the Kingdom of Heaven begin? It begins in the family, not in any other place. The Kingdom of Heaven is the dimensionally expanded version of the family; it does not appear outside the realm of the family. Hence, when you embrace your spouse, you need to think that all the men and women of the world are becoming as one. The family is the place where you can make the conditional offering of loving all humanity. (30-83, 1970.3.17)

The Kingdom of Heaven is established based on the family. You should

never forget to maintain your dignity as Blessed Families. (21-77, 1968.10.20)

In the future, the Sunday service of the Unification Church should be in the format of a report, not a sermon. The contents of the report should be about something a family can be proud of. Therefore, the whole family would need to attend the service. In this way, the other families can model themselves after the exemplary families and be guided by them to the right path. In such a manner we can establish the heavenly kingdom for the family, on earth. You should bear in mind that before this is done God's Kingdom on earth cannot be established. (23-63, 1969.5.11)

The reason I'm not currently constructing any church buildings is because I have plans of my own. The number of people in the church is not important. The Kingdom of Heaven does not begin from the church; it originates from the family, that is, the bride and groom.

Woman was born to meet man, and vice versa. When a baby wakes up, it looks for its "mama." The husband should call his wife more than the baby calls its mother. A person who fails to do so is truly pitiable. The wife should also call her husband more than he does her. They should become such a couple. As husband and wife enjoying the happiness of conjugal harmony, they should call out to each other all the time. If they can live in such a manner forever, they would not envy the young even when they grow old. In the future, I will



arrange a world tour for those blessed couples that reach the age of eighty. (23-55, 1969.5.11)

Just like in the early days of our church, you should form a household that can make your friends exclaim, “Hey, I like this place better than my own home. Here, boiled barley and gruel tastes better than food in my own home. Let me stay one more night!” Your family must make your friends and visitors want to abandon their own homes to live in yours. Only then can your family belong to God’s Kingdom. (16-328, 1966.7.31)

The Kingdom of Heaven of husband and wife is established only when a couple becomes one based on God’s love. No one can dissolve that union and it will never separate into two. What kind of love did you find? If you found God’s love, your mind and body should be in complete oneness so that His love can dwell in you. In this way, the heavenly kingdom for a married couple and for the family can be established. When a father and mother are in a complete union of love and the children have their own spouses to love just as their parents loved each other, family heaven can be realized. When parents become plus and children become minus, the heavenly kingdom in the family appears. (Blessed Family - 943)

In a married couple, what should the husband do? He should be involved with church activities. The wife should deal with material matters. This is what they

are supposed to be responsible for in their daily lives. Then what should they do as a family? The father, mother and children should be united. From there family heaven can come into existence. Therefore, in order to establish God’s Kingdom based on love, the four-position foundation needs to be fulfilled. (26-101, 1969.10.18)

## 2.2. The family is the training ground for true love

The cosmos-centered ideology is for the sake of achieving mind-body unity. It is to establish the family as the embodiment of God’s love, and to implement these ideas in the spiritual and physical worlds. The Chinese character for *ju* (宙) in *cheon-ju* (cosmos) means “house.” That’s why the term “cosmos-centered ideology” is being used. The cosmos is the combination of the incorporeal and corporeal worlds. How does this relate to us? We need a family. If you cannot achieve oneness on the family level, the cosmos-centered ideology will have nothing to do with you. The God-centered family is the ultimate standard to complete the ideal about which such a cosmos-centered ideology teaches. If you cannot sing the song of peace and praise happiness in the family on earth, you will be unhappy in the spirit world. (26-190, 1969.10.25)

Love continues eternally. It is the greatest aspiration. That is why everyone in the world desires to inherit it with open arms. By leaving behind such

a love on earth, you can justly advance into the presence of God when you enter the spirit world. The family is the place where you can attain such a love. Entering the Kingdom of Heaven through the family is none other than establishing the realm of oneness of love. (Blessed Family - 937)

If there is a heaven, there must be an earth, and if there is a heaven and an earth, there must be a man and woman representing them. In the family resides the standard of heart where the two can be united in all dimensions. Such a family is the absolute standard for the world of God's purpose; it can overcome any difficult circumstance. That is where the foundation for a new history, new world and new cosmos is laid. (25-148, 1969.10.3)

The cosmos-centered ideal should be realized on the foundation of the family. The cosmos is the totality of heaven and earth. The two are like mind and body in a human being. Mind and body should become as one. One subject partner needs one object partner; likewise, one man needs one woman. The union of a man and woman will create a family. (26-189, 1969.10.25)

A family is the ethical foundation of the society and is the exemplary, fundamental and primary organization. In such a family, love becomes the most accurate measurement of value. (Blessed Family - 930)

How should we measure the value of

humanity? We should place more value in the state of an individual's heart rather than the state of the world. Therefore, to love the world you need to love individual people. You should love them as a man loves his wife and vice versa.

(Blessed Family - 929)

In order to become God's child, you need to take after His heart. His heart is embedded in the world. Therefore you must love every single person in the world. If you cannot love them because they are far away, then love their nation, tribe, family or parents. This is because the parents represent God, the husband and wife represent Adam and Eve, and the children represent all humanity. (24-307, 1969.9.7)

What is the ideal world? Being colorful is more ideal than being of one color. In that sense, which is more ideal, the five races living in unity together or living separately? Living together would be more ideal. Therefore, we have to rebuild everything that does not follow the ideal way. Do you think God wants me to rebuild all these things or not? God supports such people. Therefore, you should inherit God's heart and the True Parents' tradition and focus on how to expand the bond of heart of the heavenly family which loves humankind. (Blessed Family - 928)

Raise your hand if you like old grandfathers and grandmothers. What about those who don't like them? I see many of your hands are down. If you were to

take care of 500-year-old grandparents, what would you do? Would you still like them? To love older people is to love God, because God is the oldest being in the universe. If you love God you should be able to love everyone regardless of age, whether they are the youngest, uncles, grandfathers or sons. That is to say, you need to love God's family. His family includes Japanese, Korean, American, and people of all nationalities. People with racial prejudice do not love God's family. Racial prejudice cannot exist in the ideal world. Isn't that true?

When children who have received love from their parents go out and meet people of their parents' age, they will feel very close and will try to talk with them and help them. When people who have a beautiful relationship with their siblings go out into society, they will easily get along and have close relationships with the people they meet. They will feel natural even in their relationships with the opposite sex. They would see the opposite sex as their brothers and sisters without any sexual desires or unsound ideas. God's Kingdom on earth is realized through families in which you are able to experience such love relationships centering upon God.

(Blessed Family - 927)

Life together with grandparents, parents and children is a sound family life. If one of those generations is missing from a family, it is deprived of something. When ideal families are established, those families should serve as the building blocks for God's Kingdom

on earth.

We have the mission to establish ideal families on earth. People who have experienced the deep love of grandparents in their family relate well with society. For example, they will feel very close to the elderly folk on the streets of New York, and in turn these senior citizens will treat them as if they were their grandchildren. No matter what the circumstances, they will want to communicate with each other and share feelings of closeness. Young people who have served their grandparents will try to help elderly people right away, whenever they are in need of assistance.

(Blessed Family - 927)

The family that is composed of grandparents, parents and children is a miniature form of the world. The way for humankind to live is to expand the love for their family into love for humanity. You should consider and love old people as your grandparents, middle-aged people as your parents, people who look older than you as your older brothers and sisters, and people who look younger than you as your younger brothers and sisters. So the true person is the one who considers everyone as his or her family and whose heart can love the whole of humankind by transcending the barriers and boundaries in the world. Then you are truly qualified to love your father and mother. (Blessed Family - 926)

Wherever you go you should not think of everyone you see as strangers. Instead, you should think of them

as members of your family. When you see old people you should think of them as your own parents, and you should always be ready to weep with them and share their sadness if something happens to them. (16-314, 1966.7.31)

A true family is the place where a husband loves and lives for his wife as his mother, and a wife loves and lives for her husband as her father and brother. Next, the world where a husband loves his wife as God and a wife loves and respects her husband as God is the Kingdom of Heaven where ideal families reside. Such a tradition should be established on earth.

You cannot abandon your siblings. You cannot abandon your mother. You cannot abandon anyone in your family. Therefore, the word “divorce” cannot exist. A husband represents the father and older brother, so a wife cannot abandon her husband any more than she can abandon her father and older brother. You have to love the world with such love. When you see a man who is the same age as your father, you should love him as your father, and when you see a woman the same age as your mother, you should love her as your mother. (Blessed Family - 926)

Why does everyone have affection for their family? Because the family is the base for free action focused upon parental love. Likewise, God should also be able to act freely in the family. When society is composed of individuals who possess such a radiant nucleus of love

regardless of their external appearance, God becomes free. Don't you think so? When you visit someone else's home as a guest, you feel uncomfortable, don't you? Why is it? It is because there's no bond of love with them. You feel awkward because that bond is not set up in all four directions. Therefore, our way is to become men and women of character. (Blessed Family - 925)

The Unification Church regards God's Kingdom as starting from within the realm of the tribe. When parents, siblings, cousins and second cousins become as one centering upon the grandfather, a perfect three generations are established. When this tribal domain of love becomes as one with God on earth, the whole world will be filled with God's love, and become His Kingdom. When a woman marries, she has to serve her grand parents-in-law and parents-in-law in place of God and her husband. She also has to harmonize with the sisters-in-law and brothers-in-law. If such love relationships are extended to the society, nation and world, this world will be full of peace and love, instead of crime and war. This is God's Kingdom, His ideal world. (Blessed Family - 947)

Where is the center of the universe? It is the family. Where is the base for true love to settle? It is in your family. Therefore, the family of the original ideal is one that grasps the love of the universe and participates in the protection of the universe. Also, such a family applies the realm of love for the universe to the

national level in order to walk the way of patriotism and finally, applies it to the world level. People who love their family are called filial sons or daughters, people who love their nation are called patriots, and people who love the world are called saints. (Blessed Family - 925)

Because God is at the center of the family, this world should be His Kingdom. The Blessed Families should strive to lead a life that works toward building His Kingdom. A God-centered tribe, nation and world are established when we live for the sake of others on His behalf, so Blessed Families should be responsible for creating a God-centered world. The Unification Church centered upon the True Parents is like a tribe and race. The purpose of our church is to form a heavenly nation composed of five races in unity, which can live more for the sake of the world than anyone else. This is my purpose and it is God's purpose that He desires to accomplish through me. (Blessed Family - 947)

The family is the representative training ground that educates people in love for humanity. It is the representative environment for establishing the center of heart. If you trust each other and lead a happy family life, you will stand as the center of the whole universe and be blessed with happiness. That is the beginning point of the ideal domain. Beings without love have no meaning to their existence. (Blessed Family - 925)

The family is created to be the text-

book for life in heaven. If you can love every person who is your grandfather's age as your own grandparent, you will surely enter heaven. If you can love every person who is your parents' age as your own, there will be no boundaries for you in the spirit world. If you can consider all the young people in the world as your own children, you will be able to visit any place in heaven. Even though there are twelve pearl gates leading up to heaven, you will be able to pass through all of them. The family is the teaching material through which you can relate to the whole Kingdom of Heaven. In other words, it is the textbook. (Blessed Family - 924)

In a family, parents should completely inherit the vertical axis of love and align themselves to it. Next, the husband and wife are to relate horizontally at an angle 90 degrees to that axis. The standard is the same for a nation. The axis of love exists in only one place. That is why although the family is small in itself; it extends to the tribe, nation and world centering upon this axis.

The ideal realm comes into existence when these lesser or greater relationships with the central axis continues to expand in all directions. Consequently, the work I am doing at present involves righting that axis in order to unify the world. In order to achieve this, Father should occupy the position of the prince of all ideologies. He will obtain this position not by exercising force but by digesting with love. (Blessed Family - 924)

Your families represent the sovereignty of God's Kingdom. The parents stand on behalf of this sovereignty. The children stand in the stead of the citizens, and the material possessions represent the land of that kingdom. Subsequently, being filial to one's parents is the same as being loyal to one's nation, and also leads one to fulfill one's duties as a saint. At present, the family has become the origin of many disgraceful acts, but God hopes that the family will be transformed into sanctified ground. Therefore, the mission to save corrupted families in the fallen realm lies with us. Though families worldwide are shattering, we are not in a position to abandon them. (35-306, 1970.10.30)

### Section 3. The Ideal and Value of True Family

#### 3.1. True parents, true couples, and true children

God is the vertical parent who has true love for humankind. There is only one such vertical and perpendicular relationship. It is absolute. There cannot be two such relationships. If the vertical Parent were left standing alone, He would collapse. Therefore, the horizontal parents need to be found and connected to the vertical Parent. To go into more detail, the Creator is the vertical Parent of true love, and the created Adam and Eve are in the position of His children, as well as the horizontal parents. Adam and Eve are His substantial embodiments. When they are giving

and receiving at the place where they resonate together in union, a central point comes into existence and the center of that couple's realm of resonance is established. This is the origin of life from which you were born. (183-40, 1988.10.29)

The vertical Father requires a horizontal father that can unite with Him. Why? He is needed to create a sphere. A being cannot just form a sphere on its own. A sphere comes into existence only when front and back and left and right are connected relative to the vertical and horizontal. Only when a sphere is formed can you harmonize with others and not live a self-centered life.

The universe revolves on its axis; it is in an objective position to, and revolves centering on the great axis of the universe, God. That is why it is standing on the same level. Therefore, there is only one creative true love of God in the universe. There is only one axis. There cannot be two. (182-143, 1988.10.16)

Existing theologies depict the Creator as a divine being and created human beings as essentially inferior and secular. They treat the whole of humanity as sinners. However, this perception is wrong. God created humankind because of love.

If God were the owner of the vertical love only, the children conceived by Him would maintain just a single vertical line. He would not be able to have them expand horizontally. On account of this, He is not the one who would give birth to His children. Instead, He would

have them born through true parents. The couple standing in the position of the parents of horizontal true love is the True Parents. They possess the horizontal love at a right angle to the vertical love of God, the True Parent.

That is why the love of both parents is necessary. On the one side stands the Parent who is the Creator, and on the other side stand the physical True Parents, the object partners of God, who were created in pursuit of the ideal. That is why God is in the position of the spiritual Parent and the True Parents are in the position of the physical Parents. In this way, human beings were supposed to be born connected to both the vertical love and horizontal love. (182-258, 1988.10.23)

Why should you give birth to children? It is so that you may experience the inner heart of God the joy and delight He felt at the time of the creation of Adam and Eve. That is why those who have not experienced childbirth may fail to appreciate their parents, their husband or wife. That is how they will end up. They may have loved in the past and in the present, but they cannot expand in the future. The grandparents represent the past, the parents the present, and the children the future. The family is where these three can unite as one. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

Eve is the external bride of God. Then why did God create Adam and Eve? It was for reproduction. It was to multiply His descendants. What would

He achieve by multiplying His descendants? By doing so, He would be multiplying the citizens of the vast heaven. Would reproduction be possible in the spirit world? It is not possible because God's love is vertical, and comes down as one line. God's love is a vertical path that reaches only one point. Since it comes down the one single vertical path, there is no way for reproduction to take place on that vertical line.

He created Adam and Eve as the horizontal basis of reproduction and foundation of love. Since they stand on the horizontal plane, they revolve from East to West. A 180-degree plane stretches out infinitely. Consequently, reproduction can take place in all directions. Reproduction is necessary in order to create those who can be born and grow on this vast horizontal plane before passing to the spirit world as the eternal citizens of heaven. Reproduction takes place on earth. This is because reproduction is possible only through the physical bodies of men and women. Babies cannot be born in the spirit world. (213-265, 1991.1.21)

The citizens of God's Kingdom are not born in the spirit world. For what purpose did God create physical beings? It was to multiply the citizens of heaven. Without physical bodies, reproduction cannot take place. Vertical love reaches only one point. It is only when this love revolves based on the horizontal foundation that a sphere covering 360 degrees can come into existence. There is plenty of space to live within that sphere. This is how God's children can be born on



earth. Therefore, it is not a misfortune to have many sons and daughters born on earth. The more children are born on earth, the more citizens of God's Kingdom there will be. What God desires is to fill up the limitless universe. There should not be an empty spot in its vastness. He needs more citizens in order to achieve this. (218-130, 1991.7.14)

What is the starting point? It is the right of the true parents, true king and true firstborn son. These are the foundations which Adam and Eve should have built and stood upon. These three make up the principal palace of God. At that place would be His palace and His love. When human beings and the Creator are connected as one, the foundation of true love would be laid. The starting point of this union is the center of God. It is the original foundation for the perfected family of Adam and the palace where God can dwell forever. (218-189, 1991.7.28)

What is it that our hearts desire when we human beings wake up in the morning? The moment we wake up we do not worry about what we will have for breakfast, or the work we have to do that day, or the problems of the whole world. Instead, we desire to cherish an unchanging heart full of love night and day, all year round and for our whole lives. This is the place where such men and women can form a perfect horizontal unity and be connected to the vertical God at 90 degrees. It is the place where human beings can be united with

God in love and form the ideal realm of love. For this, God created heaven and earth. (213-157, 1991.1.20)

What were the means by which you were born? Based on the original ideal of creation that is God's love, the lives of your mother and father, who are earthly beings created through love, were completely exhilarated and intoxicated in love, thereby becoming one united body, and this is how you were born. What drew them to come into union? It was the complete assimilation of man and woman through love. Their cells were full of excitement and stimulation. You were born based on the love of your parents, inheriting one life and lineage. Therefore, the being that is "I" is the fruit of the love of your parents. You are the fruit of parents' love. (213-157, 1991.1.20)

The fundamentals of God's principles of creation are that women were born for men and men were born for women. They were born for each other, and the center of their lives is their spouse. They were not born for themselves. To a husband, his wife is the center and to the wife her husband is the center. They were not born on account of themselves. They did not come into this life to live for their own sake.

For what purpose did God create the universe? If everyone realized that it was for love, how peaceful and close we would feel towards the universe. On that basis, because God has absolute love, His object is sure to live forever.

That is the most precious thing of all.  
(215-300, 1991.2.21)

All the creation would appear beautiful in your eyes at the time of your marriage, just as it was when God created the universe. The whole of creation, including you, exists through love. When you realize this, then through that love the fundamental feelings God nurtured at the time of Creation can be re-created and shared with your partner and all forms of existence on earth, all united together as one. In other words, it is possible for you to experience the deepest feelings of God at the time of Creation. You are also a part of the creation who inherited every ideal conceived by God when He created the universe. If you were to pull true love towards yourself, heaven and earth would also be drawn towards you. Even the furthest things would be drawn to you if they were pulled by true love, and things nearby could be sent far away by the power of true love. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

Sons and daughters born in the world of the one culture are princes and princesses of the absolute God. In the palace of God, human beings are the princes and the princesses. This palace is centered upon God, the Creator. We are the royal family centered upon the King of kings, the Creator. (218-198, 1991.7.28)

Human sexual organs are gifts inherited from the Creator and the ancestors and have remained unchanged through the ages. They are precious gifts that our

ancestors and even God Himself cannot interfere with. If one were to violate them, he would become the flesh and blood of the devil, destroying the principal palace of love, the center of the great way of the heavenly principle. The sexual organs are the principal palace of life, giving birth on the basis of eternal true love as God's pure essence. They are also the origin of a new lineage. Why were the sexual organs created? They were given to you for the great cause of heaven and earth, for the great providential governance of the cosmos. (193-147, 1989.10.3)

At the time of Creation, God created man and woman with the sexual organs as their emblem. As result, that which controls the sexual organs is connected to all structural elements of the human body. For this reason, a man and woman unite as one in the act of making love and give birth to a child. What would happen during childbirth? Whom would the baby take after? The baby becomes attached to the mother's nervous system so its own develops in a similar way. Can branches grow if there are no roots? The logic in this cannot be denied.

When a man and a woman become excited during love-making, it is a principle that the mind and body unite into one. That is logical. Then through which organ can love, life and lineage can be connected continually through the generations? It is the sexual organs. What comes first, love or life? In this question lies the problem. Similar to the problems of the world today, which are caused by materialistic philosophy, and the ques-

tioning of whether it is the mind or the body that comes first, we also need to ask ourselves: What is more precious, love or life? This is the problem. What comes first? The order of importance must be determined. The answer is that love comes first.

When God first established the ideal of creation, He did not do so centering upon Himself. Instead, it was centered upon love, and that is why He created the world of reciprocal relationships. This is logically correct. (193-145, 1989.10.3)

Where did men and women come from? As there is a Creator of the universe, they originated from Him. Then for what purpose did that Creator create men and women? It was for love. What love? True love. Then what is true love? True love is the love that is eternal and yet unchanging. No matter how much the era and the environment changes with time, true love will remain unchanged.

Men and women were created to fulfill the ideal of true love, which is unique, eternal and unchanging. They were not created for themselves. Creation was initiated centered on God, who is the root of all. Therefore it can be said that the whole universe was created because of love. (213-156, 1991.1.20)

A true family that has matured through true love is the love nest of God. (173-166, 1988.2.14)

God's grief is that He could not educate human beings to become true children, siblings, and couples. He could not

teach them how to be true parents. (228-34, 1992.3.1)

### 3.2. The qualities of a true family

The Kingdom of Heaven is your homeland. You can go there after restoring the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingdoms. You will know this once you die. Even the greatest human beings would find themselves in trouble on account of this. So, you should quickly decide and receive the Blessing. Then when that time comes, you will not curse yourself saying, "I should have listened to the words of Rev. Moon!" That is the quickest solution. (239-76, 1992.11.23)

Satan ravaged the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingdoms. He brought the heavenly realm, the earthly realm and the future world to ruin, thereby destroying the kingdoms of the three worlds of past, present and future. That is why, in order for us to enter the Kingdom of Heaven, we need to become perfect embodiments of the Four Great Realms of Heart. We must become people who can receive the love of the royal family as the princes and princesses of love who will inherit the Three Great Kingdoms. It is the heavenly principle that such people enter God's Kingdom. (239-74, 1992.11.23)

Since everything was lost through the Fall, when you meet your spouse as God's representative, you will feel the heart of a daughter or younger sibling. Likewise, you will also come to feel the

heart of a bride, a mother, and even new sons and daughters. For this reason, when people used to see Father, they wanted to make him their son. By restoring the realm of heart, you can judge what is right or wrong and what is good or evil, and thus return to God's side. In this way, all resentments and grief can be appeased. That is how the realm of heart works. It cannot be helped.

You need to form families of love. Let it be known that the Kingdom of Heaven is the place for members of a unified royal family that have experienced love as princes and princesses of God's Kingdom, the realm of His love! Amen! While you are living on earth, you need to base your lives on this principle. Even when you pass on to the next world, you need to do your absolute best to follow this principle. During my whole life, I have never thought of anything other than this. (238-262, 1992.11.22)

When you return home you need to serve your grandparents as you would God. You need to serve your parents as if they were the king and queen; the center of the family. As the sons and daughters of such parents, you are the princes and princesses who are to inherit their respective duties while you are growing up. Once you have grown up, inherit the kingship of the future and lead the world.

From now on, members of the Unification Church should consider these matters and keep in tune with such an order of love. When you have become the parents, mother, grandfather, or child

of such a family, you will automatically enter God's Kingdom. Heaven is the place for those who have experienced the love of the royal family of God's Kingdom on earth. (221-309, 1991.10.26)

Members of the Unification Church are closer to each other than their own siblings. In this manner, in the world of the future, front and rear, husband and wife, left and right, and above and below need to unite as one. Above and below represent the duties of children towards parents, front and rear represent the duties between siblings, and left and right represent the duties between husband and wife. Once perfection is achieved in this way, you can then ascend to the level of God in the spirit world and become like Him.

The only way to return to God is through true love, and nothing else. A true family represents the trained and perfected Adam's family based on the heavenly standard. Once it extends across the world, it will bring about the unity of East and West, as well as man and woman. The object partner needs to unite as one with the subject partner, the man. Also front and rear, and above and below need to unite. In so doing, one unified world will undoubtedly result and everything in it will become perfected based on true love and the content of the Principle! Amen! (222-321, 1991.11.6.)

The course of human life is that of a wanderer. Considering this, what is it that we need? We need to experience what true love is. Due to the Fall, humanity

could not receive the perfected parental love. So, based on true parental, true sibling, true conjugal, and true filial love, you need to form a family vertically related to God. You must create a horizontal environment, by extending your family into numerous families in all directions. Then these families become true families that can connect the vertical with the horizontal, and thereby expand to the realms of tribe, people, nation and world. That world connected through love will be God's Kingdom!

(139-212, 1986.1.31)

Filial love, the love between siblings, and parental love all need to spread. When these kinds of love are expanded and adopted by all, the family will become perfected in both heaven and earth, inheriting the spiritual and physical kingdoms. People who have lived in families that experienced God's inner heart as well as the external substantial forms of Adam and Eve belong to the realm of the royal family of God's Kingdom. Isn't that simple? What I am saying is true. (240-17, 1992.12.11)

There is only one fundamental concept common to the three main ideals of true parents' love, true teacher's love, and true owner's love. This is the concept of parents in a true family. Even I myself return home at night, don't I? Even a nation's president returns home at night. The school should be a place where a teacher possessing parental love teaches, and the president should be someone who governs a nation with

parental love. (213-124, 1991.1.16)

What is true love? It is about giving more than one has and not expecting anything in return. What is patriotism? It is about sacrificing one's life for the nation without expecting anything in return. A true husband is someone who is ready to give his life for the sake of his wife, time and again. True husbands, true wives, true children, true siblings, true parents, and a true family follow that path. Families in which the grandparents, parents, husband and wife, and children are all ready to do this will automatically have God dwell with them even if they tell Him not to. Why? Because they would resemble Him. (210-32, 1990.11.30)

You don't need a lot of money. Money flows away, as does knowledge, and everything else. However, the tradition of the true family based on true love remains forever, even in the spirit world. This is the most precious thing of all. (215-160, 1991.2.17)

If Adam and Eve had fulfilled their responsibility as children, as siblings, as husband and wife, and parents, then their children would have been in a different situation. As it was, Adam's children could not reach the realm of God's love. If they had been the children of unfallen Adam, they would all have been connected horizontally and would have established God's Kingdom on earth; instead, the vertical and the horizontal were not connected, and so it

could not be established. That is why the sons and daughters need to inherit two kingdoms.

Since they are destined to inherit God's Kingdom in heaven and on earth – the vertical and horizontal kingdoms – and the lineages of the vertical and horizontal parents, the sons and daughters are eligible to inherit every internal aspect of the vertical Parents and every external aspect of the horizontal parents. Being a part of the royal family signifies leading the life of having inherited the two kingdoms. The fact that you have become the royal family would mean that you stand on the perfected foundation, and you can be accepted by both kingdoms at all times.

(240-17, 1992.12.11)

The love of a mother and father can be said to be the flower that represents all men and women of the world, at the same time giving out fragrance and standing in the position of their fruit. They are the representatives. The mother and father represent the women and men of the world. Then who do their sons and daughters represent? They represent future generations of descendants who will become the billions of people that make up humankind. Therefore, the mother, father and child need to unite through God's love, and exercise a love where those above live for the sake of those below them, and vice versa. It does not mean living for oneself. From the perspective of the original nature of God's creation, it is living for the sake of others. (214-270, 1991.2.3)

The grandparents should conduct themselves as representatives of God, the parents as the president of the world, and the sons and daughters as the children of the king of the heavenly nation – that is, the princes and princesses. This characterizes the family ideal, and the original family of the love of God, the Creator. The family is the palace of God's Kingdom, and its members represent the royal family of that kingdom.

From the viewpoint of God, the grandfather is the representative of the princes and princesses of the past. Your parents are the representatives of the princes and princesses of all nations currently. Isn't that so? Doesn't everyone have such a desire? Everyone is the same. The children are the representatives of the future princes and princesses of the entire universe. It is our family that holds such great value. This is something to be proud of. That we are standing on the foundation of such a profound premise is truly precious.

"I am proud of God." When you say this, God would feel the same way about you. "I, as the central family, feel proud to be the representative family of the ideal husband and wife." When you are ready to claim this, the whole cosmos including all things of the future will welcome you. Do you recognize the background underlying this historic family, this most-highly valued family? This structure of the ideal family was created by God. You need to advance to such a position. God stands in the position of the Grandfather. Anyone who comes into His presence should bow

before Him. (216-299, 1991.4.14)

Loving and respecting the grandfather is the same as inheriting and learning about the world of the past. From the father we can learn about the present, and by loving and caring for one's children, we can learn about the future. What we can inherit from the grandparents and parents is lineage and true love. We inherit true love.

Although the grandparents are old, they are united through true love, as are the mother and father. So the children need to become like them and inherit the future from them. Unless you form a true family, you can never inherit the future world.

Looking at these three generations in the family is the same as looking at the universe. The love of the universe lies in the true family that represents the whole history beginning with God, as well as the present and the future. In a true family, the grandmother, mother and older sister are loved by the other members of the family. The same is true in the animal kingdom, where the female and male are also loved; that is the situation of every creature in this world.

What this indicates is that the family is the textbook from which you can learn the love of the universe. Without the grandmother, the family is unstable. The same is true of a family without a grandfather or either of the parents. Only when the family has all of its members present can it move directly to God's Kingdom. The grandparents,

parents, and children can all enter heaven as they are.

The people who love the true grandparents, true parents, true children, true family, true nation and true universe can enter heaven. The model textbook is the family. If you learn to constantly reflect on God with such thoughts in your mind, your future would be assured. When you love God in your heart and you can say, "I love for the sake of the future," then your future would be eternally blessed. (162-140, 1987.4.5)

#### Section 4. We Enter Heaven as a Family

A family belongs to a nation, a nation belongs to the world and the world belongs to the universe. So if you love God, even though you had to abandon your family and nation for a higher purpose, you will still attain the position of having loved everything in the universe. That is why I teach all Unification Church members to live for the sake of the world and for God. If you can love the world and humankind as much as you love me, you can enter heaven.

(Blessed Family - 954)

When we say Heavenly Father, we are saying that God is a Parent. If Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have become the king and queen of the heavenly nation, as well as the parents. They would have been the king and queen of God's Kingdom and the universe. That's why it is said that devoted, filial children and loyal subjects can enter heaven.



When a woman serves her husband as God, lord and king, and leads a life of true love, she can enter heaven. In this way, it becomes logical that you cannot be welcome in heaven unless you love your parents, nation and world. (Blessed Family - 954)

What is the Fall? What are fallen children? Fallen children cannot deeply feel God as their Father. Their mind doesn't have a concept of God.

You should have the following experiences and realizations. Firstly, you should substantially feel, "I am born again and have inherited new life, and I am God's child who leads a new life through the True Parents." Secondly, you need to realize, "I am a qualified citizen of God's Kingdom." Thirdly, when you think of the nation and world, you should feel God's love, and bear this thought in mind, "God has bequeathed this world to me, so as His child I have a right to possess this world." (Blessed Family - 953)

You cannot enter heaven alone. In this regard, a husband and wife need to achieve unity. In order to go through this process, one first needs Cain to be united with them. For this, an environment of Cain-Abel relationships is needed. Unification Thought teaches that you cannot be restored unless you have established a standard of unity between brothers and sisters before reaching the position as parents or couple. (Blessed Family - 953)

If you cannot experience heavenly

love on earth, you are not able to enter God's Kingdom in the spirit world. Have you sincerely loved a Cain-type person? In order to go to the Kingdom of Heaven, your love should surpass the parental love and conjugal love of the satanic world. If the parents in the satanic world are able to die for the sake of their child, we should demonstrate a love that surpasses them. (Blessed Family - 953)

Your mind and your life should overflow with God's love and should let the love droplets fall continuously. When love overflows like this, there is hope, but if it dries up, you will perish with your family. People without love will be stricken out of the world of love. Such people are destined to be excluded from the world of the tradition of love. (Blessed Family - 952)

Only when you can respect parental love and conjugal love can you be qualified to enter heaven. You have to love your parents more than you love your spouse, and you have to love your grandparents more than you love your parents. This is the core teaching of heaven and the ideal motto. (Blessed Family - 952)

What kind of people can enter heaven? Those who love their son more than God cannot enter Heaven and neither can those who love their wives or themselves more than God. (35-305, 1970.10.30)

I am Eu Hyo-won. As Father's close disciple, I served for a long time as church president, and I wrote the Divine

Principle, which became our worldwide scripture. I thought I would be in the top position in the spirit world. But when Father organized my trinity in the spirit world, with the hierarchy set in the order of Lee Ki-suk, Eu Hyo-won and Park Jong-gu, I was disappointed and so I complained.

Father said, "The spirit world is the world of love where competition of intellect does not exist, only that of love. Lee Ki-suk has more love, and that is why he became the eldest in the trinity." I could understand after listening to Father's explanation. I have not yet entered heaven; I am still on the way. Thus far, my work for the church has inclined heavily towards intellect, but from now on both my wife on earth and I will focus on working with a loving heart.

Heung-jin nim is currently in Heaven. He could not enter until he received the Blessing. Only after establishing the four-position foundation could he finally enter. The spirit world is the world of love. (Blessed Family - 952)

A person leading a celibate life can never enter heaven. For such a person, heaven is the land of despair. A land of solitude still presents hope, but the land of despair presents no hope at all. (Blessed Family - 951)

How do you picture heaven? In a word, it is the living environment for a perfected person. If it is the place for a perfected person with true love, then what is such a person like? Humankind is composed of man and woman. When

considering how the perfection of God's ideal love can be achieved on earth, we can safely conclude that this ideal can only be achieved by a man and woman together. It can be perfected with a man and woman who together take initiative to practice perfect love from the core of their beings. (Blessed Family - 951)

Who will build God's Kingdom? Only couples who are thankful even as they walk the way of crucifixion for the will of God can do this. The gates of heaven can be opened only through the husband and wife who are an eternal and unchanging couple with absolute faith, absolute practice and absolute heart. (Blessed Family - 951)

Considering that it is God's desire for you to become exemplary families in this world of the enemy in accordance with His will, you should realize that you can only enter heaven as a family. (29-9, 1970.2.15)

You cannot go to heaven if you are single. The Blessing allows you to pass through the gates of heaven. It is a place where only families can be welcomed. The three generations of the family need to be connected in order to enter. The 70 family members of Jacob consist of three generations of his family. That is how they could enter Egypt. (12-266, 1963.5.25)

According to the original principle of creation, heaven is a place where only families can enter. You can only be happy when your parents, children, and mem-

bers of your clan have all entered together. Could that place truly be called heaven if only the children were allowed and the parents ended up in hell? Therefore, in paving the way to heaven in the future, the Unification Church should first create the family standard. Otherwise, you will not be able to enter. Based on the family, you need to free yourself from all situations in which Satan can accuse you. In other words, you need to free yourself from all the historical and providential standards of accusation. (21-63, 1968.9.1)

You cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven alone. There is no way you can enter it alone. Adam and Eve fell together and opened the gates of hell, and therefore you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven alone. That is why even Jesus could not go there; instead, he is in paradise. Jesus was supposed to enter the Kingdom of Heaven only after obtaining his bride. The Christians of today do not know about this, and say they will follow him. If they were to be true to their words, they would have to go and come back again. Unless you form a family and establish the foundation for the restoration of the family, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. That is why the Unification Church is conducting the Blessing. (23-315, 1969.6.8)

The woman sinned first, and so the Holy Spirit who is female comes first in the form of the mother and cleanses the world of its sin, and then Jesus needs to come again as the bridegroom with a

new seed. God's purpose is to revitalize and recreate the world with humankind newly centered upon Him, as kinsfolk of the true parents of a new heaven and earth. Only when such a world comes into existence can it be said that everything has been done in accordance with His plan. If God who has been guiding His providence for six thousand years did not have a purpose, then there would be no need to believe in Him. (21-199, 1968.11.20)

What kind of place is the Kingdom of Heaven? It is a place prepared for a man and woman who together have formed a family centered on God. Jesus came to earth but he was crucified before he could receive his bride and so could not have any children. For two thousand years he has had to remain in paradise until this time, praying and having the Holy Spirit work on his behalf. (21-199, 1968.11.20)

God did not create the world in such a way that the husband could enter heaven while his wife went into hell. At the time of creation the main characters of the ideal, that is, the father, mother, and their children, were supposed to establish a tribe, race and nation. Shouldn't it have been like that? However, the first human ancestors fell, and so hell came to exist. (16-33, 1965.12.26)

The heaven we speak of in the Unification Church is not a place one can enter alone; it is a place where the whole family resides together. According to

God's ideal of creation, do you think heaven is where the man and woman enter separately? Of course not. It is the place where they enter together. It is a place where, if the father were to enter, the mother should also enter, and if the parents were to enter, their children should also enter. Both the mother and father should enter heaven together; if the father entered heaven and the mother went to hell, could such a place be called heaven? From this perspective, the Unification Church is a truly historic religion. (34-209, 1970.9.6)

People who have not fallen will marry in holy matrimony in the bosom of God's love during their life on earth, give birth to children beloved by God and have grandchildren who are a source of delight to Him. They will all receive God's love and enter heaven together as a family. Could that place be called heaven if you enter it without your children? Paradise, on the other hand, is a place where the most loving husband and wife, parents or children enter separately. It is not related to the family in any way. Would such a place be heaven? Heaven is a place where the whole family can enter and have give-and-take with each other in attendance of God. If someone was being tormented in hell while his parents were residing happily in heaven, would that be right? Would such a place be heaven? (19-105, 1967.12.31)

You cannot enter heaven as an individual. When I looked into it, I found out that it is not the place of dreams

dreamed up and believed in by Christians until now. Heaven is a place where one enters as a family. The whole family is supposed to reside in it together. It is a place for the family. The place where the father, mother, sons and daughters can live together in harmony serving God is the ideal world. However, if the father ended up in hell, the mother in heaven, the older sister in hell and the younger sibling in heaven, would you be happy even if you went to heaven? The Kingdom of Heaven is a place the whole family enters together. (22-271, 1969.5.4)

What is the secret to entering heaven? It is a place where an individual cannot enter alone. Only whole families may enter there. Not only that, you need to bring with you members of your tribe. Having many members in your tribe serving God on earth is truly a blessing. If in a family there were many children as well as abundant wealth, that family is said to be blessed. In this regard, in order to be blessed and enter heaven, one needs to go not as an individual, but as a member of a family. (22-168, 1969.2.2)

## Section 5. The Family Pledge

### 5.1. Those who can recite the Family Pledge

The families who recite the Family Pledge should achieve mind and body unity. In principle, you could not recite it unless you are united in mind and body. You need to eliminate everything that falls short of its standard and increase

everything that coincides with it by reciting the Pledge and praying every day. In this way, you can achieve complete mind–body unity. In the original sense, you would only recite the Family Pledge after reaching such a state. (261-143, 1994.6.9)

The Completed Testament Age must unfold in accordance with the Family Pledge. The most important phrase is “Our family... centering on true love.” This tells us that we have crossed over the fallen realm. It signifies that everything that had been divided through the false love, false life and false lineage of the false parents has now been united.

When you are reciting, “...centering on true love,” you need to do so in a state of complete mind-body unity. You must also be in a state where the mind and body, the husband and wife, and the sons and daughters are united as one. Through your children, you need to resolve the historic deadlock caused by the shedding of Abel’s blood by Cain’s hands. The Family Pledge needs to be recited on the foundation of the unity of mind and body, husband and wife, and of the children, so that everyone has achieved oneness with each other. (264-192, 1994.10.9)

Who can recite the Family Pledge? People who have inherited the false love and false life through the false parents of the satanic world are not qualified to recite it. Only those who have returned to the originally intended world, become one with God and the True Parents,

and who stand on the basis of having achieved, through true love, oneness of mind and body, unity between husband and wife and unity among sons and daughters may recite the Family Pledge. (264-213, 1994.11.3)

Who can enter heaven? It is not a place where just anyone can enter. It is a place for only those who have achieved oneness of mind and body, husband and wife, and sons and daughters, and have established the family four-position foundation over three generations. That is why to enter heaven, the whole family, which is the primary base, needs to be completely united. The Family Pledge is only for those who can achieve this.

That is why you need to reflect at every mealtime – breakfast, lunch and dinner – and also when you wake up in the morning and go to bed at night, on whether you have fallen into a position of having induced a relationship with Satan once again, through disunity of your mind and body.

Conflict between husband and wife should not exist. It causes nothing but problems. Until now you have lived as you pleased, but in the future a time will come when family feuds are subject to the heavenly law. These laws will be severe; there will be no forgiveness. The women in particular must beware. Fallen women need to learn to control their tongues. They need to watch what they say. Women have important responsibilities to shoulder, because all responsibility will lie with them. (264-214, 1994.11.3)

The Family Pledge is not for the general public. It is not intended for just anyone to recite. The beginning of the eight verses of the Family Pledge are set forth as a premise in the phrase, “Our family ... centering on true love.” This phrase can only be recited on a foundation that has no relation to the satanic world. (263-195, 1994.10.4)

## 5.2. The content of the Family Pledge

*1. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love.*

The first pledge is, “Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love.” In simple terms, these words mean that we are the ones who will build God’s Kingdom on earth and in heaven. It means that we need to form God-centered families, since the family was lost.

It means our family will, through true love and our original homeland, build God’s Kingdom on earth and in heaven, which is the original ideal of creation. The original homeland is based on the family, not the nation. That is why you need to return to your hometowns. Your family needs to return to your hometown in order to establish God’s Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Once

you have restored the hometown, the nation and the whole world will automatically be united. There is nothing to worry about. God’s Kingdom on earth and in heaven will automatically come into existence. It all begins from within the family. (260-157, 1994.5.2)

What is pledge number one? It contains the words, “...to seek our original homeland...centering on true love,” so we need to seek that homeland. We are pledging to complete “the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven,” God’s ideal of creation. We need to build it, with our own hands. We need to reclaim it from the world of the devil. We need to completely transform the satanic world. Do you understand? That is why we are not talking about completing, but building. (261-88, 1994.5.22)

Pledge number one refers to seeking our original homeland and building the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation. Since the kingdom was lost, it needs to be restored. God will not establish it for us. We need to do it ourselves. (263-148, 1994.8.21)

*2. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, by centering on true love.*

Pledge number two of the Family Pledge also contains the phrase, “Our family... by centering on true love.” This signifies that nothing can be accomplished without true love. The next phrase is, “Our family... pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family.” This means that the father needs to practice the way of filial piety, as do the children. In fact, every member of the family needs to do the same. They need to inherit the tradition of filial piety. Pledge number two goes on to say, “We pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of ... patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth.”

So the whole of pledge number two states, “Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, by centering on true love.” That means that you need to become parents and raise your children well. The words “divine sons and daughters” refer to the children that abide by the law of God’s Kingdom and His Palace, both in the spiritual and physical worlds.

In both these worlds, the sovereignty and the citizens of His Kingdom need to abide by His law. The sovereignty is the subject partner and the citizens are

the object partners which exist in the two worlds. (260-157, 1994.5.2)

Pledge number two signifies that our family pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by serving God and the True Parents, to fulfill the way of filial piety in our family, patriotism in our nation, saints in the world, and a family of divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth. This means that we will complete everything desired by God in our family. Through it, we are making a vow that as parents, we will educate the children in our family, the citizens in our nation, and the people living in the world, and in heaven and earth, so that they may become eligible to become the family members of God’s Kingdom. (260-190, 1994.5.8)

What is the content of pledge number two? It speaks about a representative family. Therefore, you need to pledge, “To represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents, and to perfect the dutiful way of filial piety in our family, patriotism in our nation, saints in the world, and a family of divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth.”

We need to rid the world of everything and everyone that was disloyal, impious and treacherous to God throughout history. There were many like that in past families, nations, world, and even in the spirit world. Numerous though they may be, as their representative you need to become as one with the True Parents and perfect such a



family as depicted in the Pledge. (261-88, 1994.5.22)

You need to fulfill the paths of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters based on love. Your family represents Adam and Eve, the pinnacle family. Since you were blessed from such a high position, you can then settle down on earth. Once you settle down centering on heavenly love, you become a central family. Such a family will be one of divine sons and daughters, saints, patriots, and children of filial piety. Such a family will forever be the seed for future generations. The same is also true of its fruit. By becoming people who base their lives on this principle over countless generations to come, you will undoubtedly become the citizens of God's Kingdom. (263-149, 1994.8.21)

*3. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love.*

Pledge number three states, "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love." You know about the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. If Adam and Eve had not Fallen, but perfected themselves, they would have become God's royal family. Therefore, this part of the Pledge signifies that entering God's

Kingdom requires becoming a restored royal family. The Blessed Families need to achieve this.

In order for a man and a woman to receive love from each other, they need to stand in such a position; otherwise, they cannot love each other. Conjugal love should only take place where the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships have been realized. These realms and kingships cannot be realized without love. That is why man is absolutely necessary for woman, and vice versa. Blessed families should strive every day in order to achieve this goal. This is a practical matter, and it is set right before your very eyes. (260-190, 1994.5.8)

Pledge number three says, "Our family... pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love." Since Adam and Eve failed to accomplish them through their first love, we have to fulfill them as originally intended. Terms such as "divine sons and daughters" in pledge number two carry the implicit meaning of restoration. We therefore need to achieve pledge number three on the basis of first fulfilling the content of number two.

This pledge clearly requires us "... to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships, and the Realm of the Royal Family." The realm of the royal family signifies that the direct descendants of the Lord at his Second Advent have no conditions of

indemnity to fulfill. The direct descendants are not affected by them. Such conditions still apply to the woman and son in the realm of Cain, but not to the direct descendants. That is exactly what took place with True Mother, Sung-jin's mother, and Sung-jin himself.

To put it more clearly, to be included in the realm of God's royal family is acknowledging the realm of Cain. By putting them in the position of the restored younger brother, and treating them as the royal family, Satan would have no grounds on which to accuse. Satan would have to acknowledge them, because he would have no conditions on which he can claim them as his children. If the realm of Cain were not included, it would mean that within the satanic realm would be those who are not part of the royal family, and so Satan would still maintain his fallen existence. However, by recognizing the realm of Cain as part of the royal family, Satan would have to retreat. This is crucially important. (260-158, 1994.5.2)

The Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships need to be perfected. The grandfather stands in the place of God. The father is the center of the second generations, and so he would be the king of families in the world. Therefore, you need to serve your father and mother as the king and queen, and your grandfather as God. By receiving the two loves of mother and father on behalf of God, we can enter the era of the grandchildren and subsequently progress to the universe that will be

the manifestation of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. (264-195, 1994.10.9)

By practicing a life based on pledge number three you would finally perfect the ideal model as originally intended by God, the original model of Adam who had not fallen, that is, the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. "Our family...pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love."! Only the families that have accomplished this can advance to the place of perfection. By serving God and the True Parents you must stand as representatives of the world, in a perfected position similar to Jesus. The moment you begin to serve God from such a position, your connection to Satan would be completely severed.

Until this time people in the world have stood in the position of the first-born son and acted as our enemies, killing Abel on God's side; however, they can no longer do so. When the truth of the matter became clear, it turned out that the younger brother was actually the "elder brother." Their positions were switched, but they were still brothers. That is why people living in the world should be treated as part of the royal family.

The Unification Church is the Abel-type royal family and the satanic world is the Cain-type royal family. Members of our church cannot enter heaven unless they have brought these members of the Cain-type royal family into

oneness. You need to carry out this work in line with True Parents. In uniting with them there would be no opposition in doing this, and the world would follow automatically. (261-88, 1994.5.22)

*4. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love.*

Pledge number four says, "Our family... pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love." The phrase "our family ... by centering on true love" signifies the same in every part of the Pledge. This is followed by the phrase, "to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation." No matter how large a family is, it is still one family. When you pass on to the spirit world you will find yourself part of an extended family. The last part of this pledge is, "perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness." It means that by building the universal extended family, we will realize a world in which universal freedom, universal peace, and universal happiness are present. (260-158, 1994.5.2)

The phrase, "Our family ... pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal

of creation... by centering on true love" indicates that God's ideal is to have the whole world become one extended family, one big household. Since it is the place for those who have perfected the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingdoms, everyone belongs to one global family – not two – which is centered on God. By building the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, we would have transformed the whole world into one extended family. (260-191, 1994.5.8)

Let's consider the part, "Our family ... pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness..." The freedom referred to here is not that of an individual, but that of the people belonging to the one global extended family. This is the same for the peace and happiness. This means that the whole of humanity will find happiness. (260-192, 1994.5.8)

What is pledge number four about? What should you do, centering on God's true love? "To build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness..." God's ideal of creation is to create one extended family on such a foundation, as He desires. The Cain and Abel worlds are meant to be a single extended family. At the place where the original ideal, that is, the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great

Kingships, has been established, the ideal of the one global family would be perfected. We pledge to perfect a world of freedom, peace and happiness by standing in such a position. Everything should be fulfilled in a particular order.

(261-89, 1994.5.22)

*5. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love.*

Pledge number five says, “Our family ... pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love.” The advancement mentioned in this part of the Pledge refers to progressive development taking place daily. It should not stop. If it were to stop, everything would become related to hell. Therefore, a progressive development must take place. We must strive for this.

Every day of our religious lives is concerned with God and the spirit world. Members of the Unification Church were supposed to live every day aligned with the spirit world; however, the problem is that not many are doing so. They tend to think about the physical world before they concern themselves with spiritual matters. It should be the other way round.

Blessed families should unite as one centering on true love, to strive every day to advance the unification of the spiritual and physical worlds as subject

and object partners. There must be no stopping along the way; only continuous progressive development. Whatever is alive continues to advance, and only that which is dead stops advancing. In addition, we must accelerate this process. Whatever stops, leads to hell, and whatever continues to grow leads to prosperity and God’s Kingdom. We have no need for the word “stop.”

When you first joined the church, you were overcome with joy; however now that a decade or two has passed, how do you feel? If you stop, you will only descend. Stopping leads to hell whereas growth leads to heaven. Stopping is what is most desired by Satan. Therefore, every day you need to add something to yourselves. These are important words. People in the world strive to save more money, but we strive to save more lives every day. (260-159, 1994.5.2)

The Blessed Families should realize that there is a vast spirit world, which is the subject partner to the physical world. The spirit world is the plus. It is the same as the mind being the plus. The body represents the physical world whereas the mind represents the spirit world. The mind is like the plus and the body is like the minus. Consequently, if you fail to recognize the world of mind as subject in your everyday lives, you will end up in hell. The body denied the mind, delivering a blow and becoming the subject; but it should be the other way round.

As it says in the fifth pledge, we need “to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical

world as subject and object partners.” The two worlds must be united. In the phrase “strive every day to advance the unification”, the advancement is an ever-progressive one. “Our family ... pledges to strive every day to advance the unification...” We must strive to accelerate the process, that is, we must try to bring about the advancement as quickly as possible. There can be no stopping. If we stop, we will only fall behind. Stopping leads to hell and death. Stopping puts you on the path to hell, but striving forward leads to development. Striving on, we need to speed up the process. Sleeping and lazing around, eating and enjoying yourself do not contribute to the providence. You must lead a busy life. Life is short. Though the universe may be vast, it still has only one central axis and if that were to revolve once, the whole universe would also revolve once. It needs to follow suit. Therefore, you need to align to the central axis.

That is why this part of the Pledge states, “Our family ... pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love.” You need to run without pause, just like Father. You need to move forward without even sleeping. If you do that, wouldn't you be able to build the world you have been thinking of? You will not be able to make a world you have never thought of. Therefore, you have to think about the two worlds as reciprocal partners. (260-194, 1994.5.8)

The Family Pledge states, “Our family

... pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love.” This means that the whole world is one extended family. The spiritual and physical worlds need to unite into one as the object partner of the subject partner that is God's Kingdom. We need to do more than just unite; we need to rid this world of hell on earth, the satanic realm, striving to hasten unification. We have no time to lose. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

*6. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love.*

Pledge number six states, “Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love.” In short, you should not try to live well by yourself. The clause “Our family...by embodying God and True Parents.... centering on true love” shows that heavenly fortune lies with God and the True Parents. Therefore, this part of the pledge signifies that you will try to perfect a family that goes the heavenly way, attracts heavenly fortune, and conveys Heaven's blessings to your community. That means that wherever they go, our Blessed Families will become central

families that distribute blessings to others. (260-160, 1994.5.2)

Pledge number six begins with “Our family pledges ... centering on true love.” You know what true love is, don’t you? You must bear it in mind all the time. The phrase “embodying God and True Parents” signifies that Blessed Families are the delegates of God and the True Parents. Your family represents God and True Parents, and as such, moves heavenly fortune and conveys God’s blessing to your community. “Our family... pledges to become a family that conveys Heaven’s blessing to our community...” Blessed families should not just try to receive blessings for themselves and live affluently. They have to become part of the royal family and help to restore all people in the world to become citizens of God’s Kingdom.

The Blessed Family pledges to embody God and True Parents and as such becomes a family that moves heavenly fortune, by centering on true love. What this means is that the family that embodies God and True Parents can move heavenly fortune. This part of the Pledge says, “Our family...pledges to become a family that conveys Heaven’s blessing to our community...” Through these words you are making a vow to become a channel of blessing, distributing all blessings from God equally to all the people of the world. God and the True Parents’ family are as one. Though there are only one set of True Parents, there are many Blessed Families standing in their stead that can spread out

across the world and become channels that distribute blessings on their behalf. You should strive to become such a family. (260-195, 1994.5.8)

Pledge number six mentions moving heavenly fortune, doesn’t it? Here, you are making the pledge to “become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents...by centering on true love.” The hardships endured by the True Parents were not for their own benefit. Everything was for the liberation of all humanity and in order to convey and distribute heavenly fortune amongst them. The heavenly fortune that comes with the True Parents needs to be handed out. In short, you need to become channels of blessing. Do you understand? No matter how advanced you are and how united you are, you should not try to receive blessings for your own benefit while you are on earth. By performing meritorious deeds on earth you should receive the great benefits of heavenly fortune. These should not be kept for you but conveyed to others so that all may be satisfied.

Until now, I have walked the path of opposition in order to connect all peoples to the heavenly fortune, and to establish the Will of the Parent in an environment of happiness and freedom. As such, everyone would be able to move heaven and earth and receive blessings from God. As representatives of the True Parents’ family, the blessed couples should also become families that distribute heavenly fortune to others, because only then can they attain the right to fol-



low the footsteps of the True Parents into God's Kingdom, and live there together with them. (261-91, 1994.5.22)

“Our family... pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love.” These words simply mean that you should become institutions of blessings. Only then can you become channels that can distribute blessings from God as the families who can unify heaven and earth. Do you understand? You need to become a fountain of blessings. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

*7. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, through living for the sake of others, to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love.*

Pledge number seven of the Family Pledge reads, “7. Our family... pledges... to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love.” The clause “Our family... rooted in the original lineage... centering on true love” emphasizes the words “original lineage.” Lineage is very important. It should be neither changed nor defiled. This part of the Pledge tells us to create a world based on the culture of heart. The culture of heart means living everyday life as an expression of the principle of living for the sake of others with true love. The world based on the culture of heart

refers to the one great enclosure embracing everything – that is, the tribe of the realm of the heart. (260-160, 1994.5.2)

Can you understand what is meant by “the world based on the culture of heart”? In simple terms, it means that the worlds of God's heart and the True Parents' heart, the spiritual and physical worlds are all as one. That is why we say that our family pledges to build a world based on the culture of heart. This is our ideal. There can be only one culture and not two. The fallen world is overflowing with many cultures. Only when we have united them into one can we welcome the Kingdom of Heaven at the level of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Without such a heart, the individual, family and tribe cannot be connected. Without the world based on the culture of heart, unity can never come on all levels from the individual right through to the cosmos. (260-196, 1994.5.8)

God's world is one based on the culture of heart. It is one unified extended family centered upon the one love of God. As such, the five races should live as one big family, with no one above or below others. Such a time is coming. If the people living in the world were united in the desire to create a lifestyle of equality for all, then how could we do that? On what nation should that lifestyle be based? In order to make that choice, we should base our decision on the poorest nation in the world. For instance, if North Korea were the poorest, we should



base our decision upon it, not Africa or Japan. Centering on the Adam nation, we should set the poorest nation as the standard. (261-93, 1994.5.22)

The world based on the culture of heart is the world of God's original culture and one that is based on the culture of perfected Adam who has not fallen. There cannot be two cultures but only one. Therefore in the future, the world will be unified and there will be only one language and one set of customs and traditions. Only in such a circumstance can God dwell with individuals and families. (261-95, 1994.5.22)

"Our family... pledges... to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love." This part of the Pledge speaks about the world of heart, the world where true love has been manifested. The world should become such a place that, wherever you go, you will find families waiting to welcome you as guests. Families would invite guests whenever they had something good to eat, with the heart of sharing it with other brothers and sisters from around the world. We will enter an era in which every family will want to serve other families in the world as their own brothers and sisters, sharing food and whatever else they have.

By welcoming the era where we will manifest and globalize the realm of heart, we will consequently establish a world based on the unified culture of heart, a world of a single unified cul-

ture. The world will be without war or conflict, and God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven will be realized. Once the world of the culture of heart is established, God's providence of restoration will come to an end. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

*8. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, having entered the Completed Testament Age, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love.*

What are the contents of pledge number eight? "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, having entered the Completed Testament Age, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love." This pledge depicts the time of creation when God made the Garden of Eden.

Having entered the Completed Testament Age, through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute what? – obedience. You need to achieve the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love, and unity between God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Then you are able to be freely active in all corners of the world, with the rights of God's children. Only then can you presume to liberate

Him and perfect the realm of liberation in God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. (301-85, 1999.4.16)

At the time of creation, God stood in the position of having exercised absolute faith, love, and obedience, but because human beings failed to form families that could stand as object partners to Him, they consequently fell into hell. We are now living in the time when everything that was lost in Adam's family can be restored worldwide through absolute faith, love and obedience on the unified foundation of True Parents' realm of victory. Unification Church members must therefore inherit and practice absolute faith, love and obedience centering on the True Parents. True Parents inherited these absolute traditions from God, and so you should inherit these traditions in turn. Do you understand? Then God's blessing will be with you. (1996.11.3)

It is our destined and inevitable task to create a relationship of unity between

father and child, but what should that unity be based on? From the bone marrow and the seed, it should be centered upon true love. Only when a baby is born in such a way can it come to mature enough in heart and body to embrace the whole world and to unite with its father and mother. Children should follow their parents with absolute faith, love and obedience, just as the son and father should follow the grandfather with absolute faith, love and obedience. These qualities will be handed down as an eternal tradition. Our preordained task is to perform liberation! Only then can we fulfill pledge number eight of the Pledge, which is to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, as we have entered the Completed Testament Age. Only when this state of oneness has been achieved can we perfect the realm of liberation in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. (295-167, 1998.8.28)

## CHAPTER THREE

# A Perspective on the Nation and the World

### Section 1. The One Nation and World Sought by Humankind

#### 1.1. The Adam-centered ideology, Adam's nation and Adam's world

What would have happened if the original human ancestors, Adam and Eve, had not fallen? In Adam's family, Adam would have become the leader of his tribe. At the same time, he also would have become the leader of his people. In addition, as the representative of the nation, Adam would have become king. Thus, the world would have united under the one philosophy based on Adam. All trivial and worthless philosophies and doctrines would have been cast aside. A myriad of doctrines brings great confusion to the world. They must be exposed at their roots and eliminated. Humanity's system of thought should have been based on Adam. The language should also have been Adam's language, the culture should have been Adam's culture, the tradition should have been Adam's tradition, the lifestyle should have been Adam's lifestyle, and the administrative systems should have been Adam's administrative systems. Everything should have come under the system of

thought of Adam's nation. The ideology centered on the true Adam is Godism. Everyone must become one with God, centered on His heart. This is what we call Godism. (20-123, 1968.5.1)

Would the family formed by Adam and Eve, had they not fallen, have been one just for the two of them or one that represented the universe? Then, to whom would the nation they established belong? Would it be God's nation or Adam and Eve's nation? It would be Adam and Eve's God-centered nation, sharing a common purpose with Him. The expanded form of that nation would be the world, and that world would also be God-centered. You should understand this. (161-243, 1987.2.22)

What are we heading for? We are on our way to God's kingdom, beginning with the kingdom on the family level to that on the tribal, global and finally universal level. That is our ultimate goal. Those who, while on earth, think of the world as their country and all the people in it as their brothers and sisters, and inherit such world-embracing traditions will, without a doubt, pass on to the place nearest to God's kingdom. This is only logical. (161-225, 1987.2.15)

Regarding heaven, don't think to yourselves, "I will bring my parents and children there with me." Instead, you should strive to bring the whole nation with you. It won't do to abandon your nation and only concern yourself with your family, thinking in your hearts, "Oh, my children!" You need to bring your nation with you. Included in the nation are your entire race and children. In my case, I resolved in my heart, "I will bring with me the whole world when I enter heaven." With this thought in my head, I worked, slept, ate, and lived my life. Since that was the way I led my life, I can pass to the central place in the spirit world. Wouldn't such a way of thinking come from God, true parents and true children? (161-225, 1987.2.15)

There can be no national boundaries in a world created by God. There can be no racial discrimination between blacks and whites. There can be no reason for conflict because only goodness prevails in such a world. Nevertheless, we see that the world we are living in is divided into separate nations by borders. Not only between races, but even within a family discord and disunity can arise between husband and wife or between parents and children. The people of goodness are struggling with those who are evil. Considering the current situation of the world, it can easily be discerned that the coming Lord must unite the world, making it a place with no racial discrimination and no borders between nations. He must reunite all broken families, and establish a king-

dom of peace in this world where even now as we speak goodness is in conflict with evil. (53-72, 1972.2.9)

Once people get to know that God definitely exists, they cannot help but follow His will. What is His will? It is to create an ideal world, by transforming the people in this world into His beloved people and this earth into His beloved domain, and bringing them together as one sovereign nation. (56-192, 1972.5.14)

Do you have such a nation? Since you don't, don't you need to establish one? What would that nation be like? It would be an ideal nation, a unified nation. It would be a nation anyone and everyone can enter. No one is excluded from the responsibility of building such a nation. Families, tribes, nations and the world have to cooperate in its establishment. That is how individuals, families, tribes, races, nations and the whole world can be united. (18-213, 1967.6.8)

Everyone needs to have their own nation. That is the absolute condition that all human beings must fulfill. Everyone without exception needs to lead a purposeful life, full of hope for such a nation and such a righteous goal. In their hearts they need to picture Utopia, and strive to live for their nation and ultimate goal by establishing laws of righteousness and living up to them. (18-213, 1967.6.8)

Generally speaking, globalism means to see the world as one nation and all humankind as compatriots, but the

globalism the Unification Church is referring to transcends all barriers from the family level upward. It is a globalism for all humanity in order to establish one world with one God as our Parent and all humankind as brothers and sisters. How fascinating this globalism of ours is! (Blessed Family -844)

What would heaven be like? What would God's kingdom on earth be like? It would be the place where people all over the world would live like Unification Church members. God's kingdom on earth would be where every person adopted our way of life. What would that world be like? It would be one where everyone would dwell together with God, and where no one would claim that He did not exist or have doubts about Him. It would be a world where everyone would unite together under God as our Heavenly Father. There would be no temptations from Satan, because he would not exist. The world governed by God would be His kingdom on earth, where He would reside with us. (79-304, 1975.9.21)

Without understanding about the Human Fall through the Divine Principle, we cannot resolve the fundamental problems in the world, and settle all the moral problems of humankind. Without the Divine Principle, human problems cannot be rectified because the troubles we face are part of the final hopeless phenomena of the Last Days, putting an end to the history brought about by Satan after his betrayal of God. These

conflicts are Satan's strategy to ruin and destroy humanity. Unless solutions are found, history cannot be resolved. Without resolving the past, we cannot expect to straighten out the present. Therefore we need to first come up with counter-proposals with regard to God's creation and ideals, and based on that, return to Godism and the way of true love, which are not self-centered but rather altruistic. In short, objects of love must be created. There is no other way to settle these matters. (219-266, 1991.10.11)

What is the purpose of marriage? It is in order to unite a man and woman centering upon the love of God in His presence. Such a union is the origin of peace and of the universe itself. The essence of true love lies in the father living for the sake of the mother and vice versa, the elder brother living for the sake of the younger brother and vice versa, and so on and so forth. A family whose members are interlocked closely with a love that esteems others is where God's love can dwell eternally, and where an eternal family and an everlasting nation can begin. (221-212, 1991.10.24)

## 1.2. The nation we all desire

We adore God's kingdom because it is a place where love dwells. It is the place where love remains eternally, not temporarily, and continues to exist transcending time and space. It is also the place where one can be respected and revered, and have one's value acknowledged one hundred percent. In short, it is a place

of eternal happiness. That is why human beings yearn and long for God's kingdom. (25-284, 1969.10.5)

If God's kingdom cannot be restored on earth during our lifetime, then once you have passed on to the spirit world, you will not be considered worthy to belong to it. You need to achieve sovereignty within God's dominion on earth before entering the spirit world. Such is the original standard of creation. (40-131, 1971.1.30)

There is nothing on earth that I covet at present. Even from a secular point of view, there is nothing for which I should feel envious. I am not interested in worldly things. I am not even remotely concerned about things like money, land and houses. "Be it in a one-room house or whatever, I must die – when the time comes – in God's kingdom. Shouldn't I pass on to the next world in a nation protected by God? If the end comes and I go to the next world without having achieved that, how pathetic my life would have been on earth! So I must seek out that nation, even if I only live in it for one day before I die." This is my lifetime wish. I am following this path with a mind that says for that one day of fulfillment, I am willing to sacrifice thousands of days. Even when you are resting, I am walking steadily on. If you can't do it, I will mobilize foreigners in your stead, and if Korea can't do it, I will have the other nations engage in an enveloping operation. In any event, I must continue down my path. (51-340, 1971.12.5)

The purpose of our leading a religious life is so that we can become the citizens of God's kingdom. Unless you do that, there will be no way for humanity and all creation to freely love you and to be proud of you as God's children. People without a nation are prone to face attacks at any time. They are bound to be placed in a miserable plight. More likely than not, they will be taken advantage of for no reason at all. In order not to become such people, the task we need to fulfill is to restore the nation desired by God, the nation that will serve as His foothold. (55-79, 1972.4.23)

We are shedding sweat and blood for this nation and this race in order to establish God's eternal kingdom, the blessed land that our descendants for thousands of generations to come can praise forever. (14-193, 1964.10.3)

There is no doubt that God's kingdom is a place that is governed according to His will by the sovereignty held by His begotten children upholding His command. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. Once it is established, the kingdom would remain eternally. Taking all this into consideration, we cannot help but think that it is truly lamentable that we are not citizens of such a kingdom. Therefore, we should lament the fact that we are not a part of such a nation. In fact, we should all lament the fact that we do not have such an unchanging sovereignty. (72-291, 1974.9.1)

Humanity has established sovereign nation after sovereign nation in order to establish such a unified sovereignty, nation and domain. In this process, a great number of people lost their lives, innumerable citizens were sacrificed, countless nations were destroyed, and many sovereign powers were replaced by others. Thus, is it not obvious that the people who were sacrificed, the people standing on God's side and those who sacrificed their lives for these causes would wish for us to one day establish God's nation and world? (72-292, 1974.9.1)

God sent His beloved son and daughter to this earth in His endeavors to establish one eternal nation, but at present, the foundation on which a nation can be restored has not been prepared yet. As all efforts made to this end were unsuccessful, time after time a man of God was sent to earth to promote, carry out and bring His work to a successful conclusion. The history that has unfolded until the present is none other than the chronicle of this work. (30-10, 1970.3.14)

The citizens of a nation without sovereignty are in a pitiful plight. Hence, Jesus preached out of concern: "Therefore do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the Gentiles seek all these things; and your heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well." (Matt. 6:31~ 33). Did he say you should seek His son first or His

kingdom? He told you to seek the kingdom desired by God. (34-337, 1970.9.20)

Even Jesus is waiting in paradise. You need to understand that, because a nation with the right to connect earth directly to heaven was not established, Jesus was blocked from standing before God's throne. Until the sovereignty of God's Kingdom is established Jesus could not reign over it as ruler and stand before God. Paradise is like a waiting room before entering heaven. Furthermore, heaven is a place you cannot enter having lived alone. It is the place where Adam and Eve would have remained together as a family had they not fallen. It is the place that you will share with your children and family; otherwise it is not possible to enter. (56-201, 1972.5.14)

Why have religious people fought a losing battle until now? It is because they have not had families, societies or nations to back them up in their faith. They were people without a nation. If they had had a nation to support them, they would have been able to survive within its domain even if their own tribes had opposed them. Yet, because this was not the case, religious believers were persecuted wherever they went, and were forced to walk the path of the sacrificial offering, shedding blood time after time. This was all due to the fact that they did not have their own nation. If they had had a sovereign and a nation, any time they exclaimed, "You ignorant people, this is the right thing!" they would have been answered with a "Yes" from oth-



ers; instead, they suffered because of not having a nation. (56-159, 1972.5.14)

In this day and age, the world domain in which spiritual salvation was perfected on earth, the realm of Christian culture, is the democratic world. However, there is no Christian state in this present-day world that God can select as His chosen people and promise to send the Messiah to, just as He promised the Israelites in ancient times when He designated them as His chosen people, the covenant still held sacred by the Jews. All of you must understand this. This is the reason for which, having lost its land, and in pursuit of a nation floating in midair with only a name and no domain, the realm of Christian culture was driven west when chased from the east, and driven south when chased from the north, wandering and evading the path of death, and yet all the while expanding worldwide. (65-48, 1972.11.13)

Unification Church members do not have their own nation. The democratic world we see today is the fruit of God's six-thousand-year long endeavors. Had you been born in Israel at the time of Jesus, you would have been killed in no time at all. A man like me would have been done away with, without leaving even the smallest trace of my existence. We must understand clearly that in this world today, there are iniquitous representatives of Satan in every nation, and communism, which is the embodiment of evil on the global level, is making preparations for the final desperate

battle to blot out religion. Do we have a nation that we can claim as our own? Since we do not, aren't we like outcasts from the world, and haven't we been treated accordingly? Never forget that you have more to feel mortified about than anyone else. (55-209, 1972.5.9)

If we do not have our own nation, then, however happy our family may feel, at any moment a group of brigands can appear in front of us and cut off our heads. Thus, we must establish our nation. Religious people do not understand this; they have no clear idea of it. We must establish a nation of goodness. This is the purpose of religion. (57-260, 1972.6.4)

Where is the representative individual who can restore God's kingdom? Nowhere on earth. That being the case, this representative individual is to be received through religion according to the ideology centered on the Second Advent, which declares that a new individual will come forth, who will in turn form a new family, tribe, race, nation and world. Thus, this Second Advent doctrine is fundamentally different from others. This representative individual would have to uproot those who are corrupted in this world of death, take root at that place and grow through the fertilizer of the secular world. He would be the one whose leadership characteristics empower him to use that as fertilizer. Taking into account that he should have the character of a citizen or son of the Kingdom, with the power of res-

urrection, and use what is regarded as good in the satanic world as a resource for his vitality, he must be a person with the character of a leader that enables him to grow with this world of death, using the decomposing corpses in it as fertilizer. In other words, he is not someone who is controlled by this world of death. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

Christ at his Second Advent is coming to save humanity. Once the heavenly standard has been established, God is ready to strike. He takes the offensive. That does not mean that He kills His foes by executing them in the style of Stalin; instead, He makes them surrender at once. He must make Satan submit to Him, firstly through His ideology, secondly through His citizenry, thirdly through His sovereignty, and fourthly through His territory. Everyone desires to have ideals, friends, power, and money, and these four items represent the four that have been listed above. (12-169, 1963.3.16)

## Section 2. Characteristics of an Ideal Society, Nation and World

### 2.1. Humankind as one extended family

The place we wish to inhabit is heaven. Would there be borders in it? Of course not. Would there be more than one language in it? Surely not. Would there be racial discrimination? Not in the least. Then, what would heaven be like? Since all human beings were originally born

from God's bosom, they are all brothers and sisters. From God's viewpoint, since all of us are His children, it naturally follows that we are all siblings; from the viewpoint of His kingdom on earth, we are all citizens of the same kingdom. Every one of us is a citizen, a subject of this kingdom. (66-281, 1973.5.16)

A perfected human being should become a citizen of the one global nation that is also God's kingdom. Which country do you belong to? Among those of you gathered here, some may be American, some German, some Korean, and so on, but where is God's kingdom? This world, earth, is your nation as well as mine. Where is our hometown? This world is our hometown. We are not concerned with national boundaries and things like that. Neither are we concerned about the differences between blacks and whites. All of us are God's children. (79-247, 1975.8.24)

The Divine Principle is the truth that cannot be changed through eternal history. It cannot be changed by the authority of some powerful person or the influence of some great nation. Not even the whole world or God Himself can change it. As this truth has remained unchanging from the past until the present, and will continue to remain unchanged even in the future, it undoubtedly holds the ideal value sought after by humankind since the beginning of time.

When the people who have been resurrected through this Principle become as one, transcending nation and world,

they will all be siblings. Then white, black and yellow races will not exist. Black people differ from others in terms of their skin color and nothing else. Bone, skin, blood and mind are the same. The difference lies only with skin color, which has been altered through climate and environment, which cannot be helped. (Blessed Family - 847)

Let's consider pine trees. As we move from the Polar regions to the temperate zone, trees become different. They vary according to their environment, starting points and history. Let's think about bears. The bears at the North Pole are white to protect themselves in an environment that is white. The white race is like the white bears at the North Pole whereas the black race is like the black bears in the temperate zone. That is the only difference. Would bears discriminate against each other by reason of the color of their fur? (Blessed Family - 847)

All humanity should become as one. The Unification Church holds international weddings. Westerners are married to Orientals, and whites and blacks get married as well. These marriages which have been held regardless of race are the most beautiful scenes in history. The problem appears when we cannot transcend racial barriers. Humankind will perish unless an inspired global ideology with such assertions emerges. They are brothers and sisters as far as God is concerned. There's no excuse for us not to be united before Him. America's founding spirit is committed to build-

ing one nation under God. This spirit is magnificent, and at present we are actually seeing it being realized. (Blessed Family - 849)

All peoples in the world are the same in that they are all human beings regardless of skin color. Whether white or black, the only difference between them is their living environment. Suppose a man married a black woman and had a black child with her, and then married a white woman and had a white child with her. He would be as much the father of the white child as he would be of the black child. These two children would share the same father. Unless people are made to feel deeply in their hearts that they are siblings born of the same Father, whatever it takes for them to realize it, the unification of all peoples and generations in the world will be impossible. (18-111, 1967.5.28)

The quickest way to bring unity of all races is international marriage. A man and woman selected from two totally different cultural spheres and environments have to become as one in harmony through God's love. This is complete unity and harmony. We have to realize such an ideal. In order to accomplish such a great work, we should find the gigantic power of love. Such a great power can only come from the utmost power of love. That is not the changing love expressed according to social and environmental circumstances. Only the most consistent and deep love can transcend the differences of nationality,

race, culture and knowledge. (Blessed Family I-845)

How can the world be united, and how can the foundation for relationships of heart be laid? These are the questions to consider. That is why I plan to hold international holy weddings for young men and women in the future. This is what God wants. He doesn't want people who stay quietly hidden within the boundaries of Korea; instead, He wishes for everything to be fulfilled within His ideological realm. The greatest desire of communist women is to marry workers. Unification Church women, however, should aim for much more than that. (17-43, 1966.11.6)

From now on, the number of members in your family who have formed a union with the lineages of other races will be what you can be proud of once you have passed to the spirit world. Therefore, when it comes to your sons and daughters, it would be essential to have them marry internationally. In the future, all single men and women of the Unification Church should get married internationally. Whether you are born a man or a woman, it would be worthy to do that. (34-73, 1970.8.29)

God is fair. America has become the representative nation in which material civilization has flourished thanks to all His blessings. As such, it would have difficulty in suddenly changing its external values to internal values. On the other hand, in the East, we set store by the

spiritual aspect rather than the material. The West has been blessed externally, but is still lacking in terms of internal values, whereas on the other hand the East has been internally blessed, but is lacking externally. God is so fair. (Blessed Family II - 380)

If you focus on spirituality in religion, you will reject materialism. In attaching importance to its spiritual civilization, the Orient rejected materialism. That materialism was embraced by the West. Many nations in the West, including the United States, have managed to achieve a high standard of living because they secured all the natural resources of the East as their own and used them to develop and advance Western Civilization. However, they have reached their limit. The spiritual civilization of the Orient has also reached its limit. The Orient has gradually come to pursue Western material civilization, while the West has come to pursue Oriental spiritual civilization. Consequently, we have reached the time when these two civilizations are engaged in a mutual cultural exchange. (Blessed Family II - 381)

What would be the most difficult and arduous path for human beings? It would be the path to heaven. Of all the paths in this universe, it is the most difficult one for humankind. Once again: the hardest path would be that leading to heaven.

Did Jesus go to heaven? He is currently in paradise, the waiting room prior to entering it. That shows you how difficult

it is to reach heaven. Then is God dwelling in heaven? The answer is no. Then is there anyone who could enter heaven ever since the outset of history? If God cannot dwell there, and His son could not even enter there, who on earth could have entered it? So, would there be anyone living in heaven at this moment? No, there wouldn't be even one person. That is why the path to heaven is by far the most difficult of all. (72-253, 1974.6.30)

## 2.2. The society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values

What attracts God most is the culture of love. Would He require money, power, knowledge or things like that? In order to design and build a nice house, one would need bricks, doors and various other materials, but most important of all would be the overall beauty of perfection that gives the finishing touch to it.

The greatest hope God cherishes for humankind is not for us to be wealthy or to become academics. As it is stated in the Bible, you should love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul and with all your strength. This is the First Commandment. The Second Commandment is to love your neighbor as yourself. These are amazing words. (143-273, 1986.3.20)

In First Corinthians, Chapter 13, the chapter on love, it states that amongst faith, hope and love, three qualities that are eternal in nature, love is the great-

est of all. Isn't that true? Humankind has not understood this truth. What does it mean to love with all your heart, and with all your soul and with all your strength? It means to love by giving everything you have, even your life.

Have you all ever loved someone so completely? Have wives loved their husbands so completely, have students loved their teachers so completely, and have citizens loved their nation so completely? As no one has ever practiced perfect love, we need to create exemplary models.

In factories, molding dies are first designed, and then products are mass-produced using these dies; similarly, we need to make a model of a true human being that will serve as a die. Only then can true human beings multiply and spread out across the world, by following the example set by that model. (143-273, 1986.3.20)

When the time comes the era of self-assertion will pass away, and we will enter into a new era where one would not be able to claim oneself as being the best. From that time on, we will live in a world of mutuality, namely, the world of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. Hence, the Unification Church emphasizes interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. That world cannot be established by the efforts of just one person. (24-298, 1969.8.31)

The world of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared val-

ues is that desired by humanity which reflects God's ideal kingdom. Such a world cannot be achieved by just one individual; and it follows that in that world one would not live all by oneself. Along with oneself there would be one's spouse and subsequently one's family. This should not remain as a concept but should rather be acted out in real life. The world in which this concept has been practiced in reality on the stage of life would be that of God's kingdom. (24-300, 1969.8.31)

What would the ideal world be like? It would certainly not be a place where people are at odds with and jealous of each other, begrudging one another's successes, and becoming sick with envy over other people's happiness. Instead, it would be a world where the success of one person would be the success of everyone and the joy of one person would be the joy of everyone. The pleasures and joys of one person could be shared by everyone in the whole world. (18-102, 1967.5.28)

Does the left eye work in unison with the right eye or not? This depicts mutual prosperity. Every part of the body is living for one purpose, and this is how every human faculty works. Though each person has two nostrils, if one were blocked, would that feel good or bad? Likewise, if one ear were blocked, would that be nice or not? Is it good to be crippled or not? Try cutting off a limb, either a leg or an arm. You would not feel good. That is why all forms of existence that have reciprocal relationships with oth-

ers testify to the existence of heaven and earth through their being. In other words, human beings themselves are living proof of that fact, and the heart is aware of this. The saying, "The human heart reflects God's heart" derives from this. (24-300, 1969.8.31)

### 2.3. One language

American pigs grunt in the same way as Korean pigs, and American sparrows chirp the same way as Korean sparrows. Considering this, why are we human beings, the lords of all creation, in this state? Everywhere you go they speak a different language, though the pigs in all those places grunt the same way and cows moo the same way as well. It is so much trouble just to order a meal! You not only become mute but also deaf. What is the cause of this? In a word, our current situation resulted from the Fall. How can we claim to be the lords of all creation when we are not even capable of unifying our languages and speaking just one? How sad this is! There are many absurdities in this world. (20-124, 1968.5.1)

With God's absolute love as the center, an absolute man and woman must come together and establish an absolute culture. In order to establish such a culture, we need one unified language and alphabet before anything else, and so I have emphasized time and again that you need to learn the Korean language and alphabet. This is because the creation and development of a culture is com-

municated to others through the written and spoken word. (135-166, 1985.11.12)

In the future, language will pose a big problem. I'm sure it is very troublesome for you even at this moment as I am speaking in Korean. How much harder, then, would it be for you to understand me if there were no one to interpret my words? Should you learn from me, or I from you? Once you understand the Korean language I speak, you will be able to learn about things more deeply, and you will come to possess knowledge that is much more valuable than what you understand at the present time. Since learning in this way is much more important than anything else, we come to the conclusion that this is the way it should be. (74-33, 1974.11.10)

If the True Parents' children cannot speak their mother tongue, they are no better off than mutes. Mutes! That is how the world will unfold as time goes on. I came to this western society and created a considerable stir in it. You should realize that my appearance here is a new threat and problem to the religious world, unrivaled by any in recent times. You should also bear in mind that from now on, studies of the original language would involve learning Korean. No matter how many of your English-language books say one thing, if the Korean original text says another, the English text must be revised to conform to it. That which is unchanging is precious, and this is true of everything. In the future all of you will need to study

the original language. (74-33, 1974.11.10)

The Korean language and alphabet were created and are being used in Korea. The term True Parents was first coined in Korean. For the first time in history, God's love and True Parents' love could be engrafted based on True Parents' love. At the beginning of the time when God could speak about love, He could only communicate in Korean on the foundation of the love centered on True Parents. The origin of the words True Parents is absolute – therein lies the reason you must learn Korean.

You also need to learn the Korean alphabet because it contains the letters used to write the language. You should understand that the first place God could speak the words of true love is in Korea. (135-166, 1985.11.12)

Since I first used the words True Parents in Korean, the origin of this term is the Korean. The words *Cham Bu Mo* (True Parents) are not English or Chinese, but Korean. Consequently, Korea can also be said to be the homeland of love for Unification Church members. Since this is the case, they, who need to seek out that homeland of love, will have to learn the Korean language and alphabet. Moreover, your desire to be blessed to Korean men and women is an expression of your innermost heart, yearning to come near to the original homeland, because the origin of the language in which God first spoke His words of true love is Korean. (135-166, 1985.11.12)



There is a philosophy to be found in the Korean language. It comes from a background of the principles and harmony of heaven and earth. There is one famous Korean in the United States who was awarded a doctorate in linguistics for Korean pronunciation. (173-75, 1988.1.3)

The Korean language is a very high-level language of religion, with expressions that are deep and delicate. No other language in the world can rival Korean in this aspect. That is why Korean people are considered to be very smart. They are trained to catch and understand every word through a precise and analytical language, and so their brain structures are on a significantly higher plane than others. Don't Koreans always take first place in the International Vocational Training Competition? As far as I know, they have held that position for seven years in a row. (173-75, 1988.1.3)

As a unified world is the goal, you should complete the reading of my speeches in the unified language. What will you do if you cannot even read those books in the original language? You need to read them in my language, not in English or German. Once you can read them, you will have no trouble in preparing sermons. The books of my speeches contain a lifetime's worth of my words.

When you pass to the spirit world and are engaged in a dialogue, will you say, "I have never come across such books and so have never read them"? I am of the mind not to have these books translated into English at all. It would be even

better to include Chinese characters in them. You will find yourself in big trouble if you pass on to the next world without having read these books, especially if you are a leader. In the coming generation, would you expect to find me or my speech books in every house? Think about it. What will it be? Of course it will be the books. (173-76, 1988.1.3)

### Section 3. The Way of True Love is the Central Ideology of Humankind

#### 3.1. The way of Adam is the way of the parent

Originally, Adam, as the progenitor of the human race, was meant to be, at the same time, the head of his family, tribe and race, as well as the king of his nation. Had the Fall not taken place, what way would this world have followed? It would have become a world of the way of Adam. Another word for this is Godism. That is how the world was originally intended to be. Yet this plan was torn to shreds by the Fall. The hole caused by Adam needs to be patched up. The Fall blew a big hole through God's ideal world. (155-304, 1965.11.1)

What did God have planned for Adam and Eve had they not fallen? He would have blessed them in holy matrimony and had them give birth to children in whom He could delight, thereby forming a family that would have been a source of joy to Him and having it expand into a tribe and then a nation.

Once this nation expanded further, it would have formed a world of Godism and the Adam-centered ideology simultaneously. The ideology to be found in that world would have been the Adam-centered ideology, which would have been an outlook on the universe, cosmos and life itself.

It would have been fine to have five races, all of different complexions, living together in that world. Skin color is merely a reflection of one's environment, and so having numerous peoples with different skin colors is a natural and fine thing. Then how did these peoples come to have different languages? Due to the Fall of the first ancestors, God separated them. (156-202, 1966.5.25)

The only path we need to know is the way of Adam; the only language, culture, tradition, way of life and system of government would be those derived from Adam. In fact, everything in this world should have been in accordance with the system of government of Adam's nation. Such a path is Godism, as we need to attain oneness with God through His heart. (20-123, 1968.5.1)

Before worrying about sovereignty, we need first to discuss the equality of human rights. The path we are in pursuit of is the cosmos-centered path, which can also be termed Godism. This is about becoming one with God. Today's democracy has excluded God from everything, and communism is an ideology whose sole considerations are materialism and humanism. The cosmos-centered ideol-

ogy, on the other hand, brings humankind together with God. Through that, we want to make this world one under God's sovereignty. (13-72, 1963.10.18)

We need to create the basis upon which we can establish the blessed land of the mind and heart, thereby setting a standard through which heart, mind, and body can be interconnected. Once mind and body are united in this manner, we need to embrace the world. Thus, in today's era, we need a cosmic ideology that extends far beyond globalism, and this is none other than Godism. Unless people base their earthly lives on Godism and establish a firm standard through which mind and body can consistently experience God's heart, we will never be able to live happily. (8-30, 1959.10.25)

Due to the Fall, people's minds and bodies were subjected to Satan's false love, which in turn made them into egocentric, and consequently, dysfunctional individuals. Hence, the families, societies, nations and world formed by the coming together of such individuals created multi-dimensional expanded conflicts and were afflicted with mutual distrust, disunity, and discord through the complications and lack of integrity within themselves. Due to egocentricity, which reflects Satan's desire, the democratic world today has become egocentric, with Satan and the people living in it heading toward destruction. To save this world, we need Unification Thought and Godism based on God's true love. (219-109, 1991.8.27)

Godism is not about living for the sake of oneself. It teaches giving for the sake of others. In short, it is a path whereby one puts others before oneself. The devil's ideology tells you to live for yourself whereas God's ideology asks you to live for others. That is why the more you give and give and then give again, the more your possessions will pile up in the next world of eternity. In the communist world, the more one gives, the more one loses, and so no one works for others. In God's world, on the other hand, this is not the case, and so everyone works night and day without rest, shedding blood and sweat, for the benefit of everyone else. Those who consistently give in the same manner as God are bound to be blessed. (209-292, 1990.11.30)

What is Godism? Another term for it is the Way of True Love. What is the Way of True Love all about? It is about giving and giving, and forgetting that you have given. If all its citizens were like that, what would Korea be like? (201-54, 1990.2.28)

What is the Way of the Parent? It is the Way of the True Parent, which means having Adam and Eve as perfected parents on earth. Then what is Godism? Since the True Parents are the horizontal parents, human beings also need their vertical parent. Hence, the vertical Way of the Parent is Godism. Head-wing thought is also the Way of the True Parent, and Godism can also be said to be vertical Godism. The horizontal Way of the True Parent and

vertical Godism, that is the vertical and the horizontal, come together and thus connect the life, love and lineage in heaven with those three entities on earth. The human race was born from this union, and that is why human beings have acquired dual characteristics. They consist of the internal and external selves. The internal self is one's vertical aspect, and the external self is one's horizontal aspect. These two selves come together to form a human being, the fruit of the union mentioned above.

(224-277, 1991.12.15)

### 3.2. The way of the parent is the way of true love

What attracts God most is the culture of love. Would He require money, power, knowledge or things like that? In order to design and build a nice house, one would need bricks, doors, and various other materials, but most important of all would be the overall beauty of perfection that gives the finishing touch to it. The greatest hope God cherishes for humankind is not for us to be wealthy or to become academics. As it is stated in the Bible, you should love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength. This is the First Commandment. The Second Commandment is to love your neighbor as yourself. These are amazing words. (143-273, 1986.3.20)

The path we should follow is the one we truly desire to tread from the bottom of our hearts, and the nation we should

seek to establish is the one we truly desire to live in eternally. The things that we would possess by right should be guaranteed to belong to the cosmos as well as to us, and to this present era as well as to the past and the future. Moreover, we should also be in possession of the authority and knowledge that will enable us to share our sorrows as well as our joys with heaven and earth. This is the greatest desire and hope that the fallen people of today should strive to fulfill in this world. (13-31, 1963.10.16)

Where would the realization of God's ideal kingdom, that is, the restoration of the homeland, first take place? It will begin with an individual who believes in loving his enemies. Hence, as long as God remains in existence, Christianity, the religion that came forth first with the movement to eliminate national boundaries, transcend all the walls of environment and culture, and embrace its enemies, by virtue of the power of love, cannot help but become the most widespread religion in the world. When you sow beans, you reap beans; when you sow red beans, you reap red beans; and when you sow seeds of red flowers, red flowers will bloom. Similarly, if Satan, who takes vengeance upon his enemies, sows seeds of the devil, from that place will grow trees of evil that take vengeance on their enemies. If, on the other hand, one who loves his enemies sows the seeds of goodness, from there will grow trees of goodness that will love their enemies. Such is the law of nature. (107-18, 1980.2.21)

There is no doubt that God's kingdom is a place that is governed according to His will by the sovereignty held by His begotten children upholding His command. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. Once it is established, the kingdom will remain eternally. Taking all this into consideration, we cannot help but think that it is truly lamentable that we are not citizens of such a kingdom. Therefore, we should lament the fact that we are not a part of such a nation. In fact, we should all lament the fact that we do not have such an unchanging sovereignty. (72-291, 1974.9.1)

What sort of ideology is Godism, which is capable of absorbing communism and democracy through Unification Thought, which I have advocated? Is it about showing off one's powers? No, it is based on true love. The question is how we are going to digest this world through true love. (181-227, 1988.10.3)

For whom does the democracy of Korea exist? It is not for political parties. Instead, it exists for the Republic of Korea. Then what should the system of thinking that governs Korea be all about? It should be about Korea working for the sake of the world. The world needs to return to Godism. Humanism cannot be trusted. If left as it is, the world will perish in less than a century. Only Godism will last forever. Only by the logic of true love can we inherit and become part of the tradition of Godism, and that is why individuals need true love, as do all men

and women, husbands and wives, sons and daughters, tribes, races, nations and the world. (177-70, 1988.5.15)

What is Godism all about? It is the Way of True Love. Then what is the Way of True Love? It is the way of thinking that asks, not for others to live for the sake of oneself, but for one to live for the sake of others. You must clearly understand this. (169-281, 1987.11.1)

What is Godism? It is not an ideology centered on the individual, family, tribe, ethnic people or nation. It is an ideology centered on the cosmos. However much people held captive within the walls of individualism try to enter the heavenly spirit world, which is based on a cosmos-centered ideology, they will not succeed. If they become centered on their family alone, thinking to themselves, "Hmm, we don't care about the world; all we care about are our children and parents," there will be no way for them to ever escape from that realm. They would be trapped there forever. So, who will demolish these walls within which all families are asserting themselves and fighting with each other? (112-211, 1981.4.12)

A healthy person can digest things that even ordinary people cannot take in, which is why everyone likes a healthy person. Similarly, those who have sound minds, that is, healthy minds, can take in anything mentally, be it democracy, communism, or any other system of thought. Then what is the way of think-

ing that the Unification Church is following? It is Unificationism. Does it sound easy? When we examine the human body, we see that it incorporates the eyes, ears, nose, hands, feet and other features. These different parts of the body must act in unison through connecting to the one life in that body. Then, for the body to function properly, should the different parts, instead of uniting in common purpose, complain among themselves, "Oh! I don't like the eyes," or complain about some other part of the body? Of course not. They should say, "I like all parts of the body." Each part of the body must cooperate with the others. (111-96, 1981.2.1)

Those who worship God must shed blood. Those who yearn to love God must shed tears. In fact, their tears should not cease to flow. Those who are seeking God must shed sweat. Then, with parental hearts and the bodies of servants, they must sacrifice and serve from the position of Abel for humanity, and give everything they have with utmost devotion. In giving, they should not boast of it to others, but instead feel ashamed that they cannot give something better. This is what Godism is all about. (38-328, 1971.1.8)

How should public property be managed? How should individuals, societies and nations be managed? Furthermore, how should the world be managed? Based on public rules of management, a new level of love and a new globalism must be established. That cannot be done

through humanism. Humanistic ideologies will perish. The question of whether or not you can embody Godism will be the deciding factor between life and death for each of you. (31-255, 1970.6.4)

We need to transcend the cultural limitations created by the numerous peoples and the five races of the world and make those cultures into one single civilization. In other words, we need to establish an ideal world that is governed by a domestic system, a social system, a national system, as well as other institutions that are all based on Godism. This process can also be referred to as the ideology centered on the perfected Adam. It is not communism or democracy, but the way of Adam. This path is one that leads us to Godism. Such a path is like a walking stick that aids us in pursuing a certain purpose. The path or ideology itself is not what we are after. It is a necessary process we need to pass through to attain our purpose, and so ideologies undergo change.

Today, the United States is considered to be a developed country as the suzerain of democracy, but a time will come in the future when it becomes corrupt because of money and it will learn to hate democracy. The current situation in Korea also reflects this fact. Though democracy in itself is a good thing, at present the people in Korea are engaged in all kinds of scheming and the slandering of others because of money and are fighting against everyone else to take power. Can that be called democracy? What is currently taking place is

a phenomenon that can only be seen under the rule of the privileged. (21-156, 1968.11.17)

Today's youth are unaware that, when they live for the sake of others, they become central figures, leaders and protectors. The true love that enables one to invest one's life for others without expecting anything in return and yet still finding joy in offering it, brings man and woman, and parents and children together in unity. In such a family God's love can dwell, and it would become eternally prosperous. This is the core of our teaching, and herein lays immortality. (222-138, 1991.10.28)

A new globalism that does away with egoism must come forth. Altruism, which aims to live for others rather than oneself, can only come from God's ideal because He is the original source of love, and the essence of love is altruism, which teaches us to sacrifice ourselves for the sake of others. Consequently, the essence of Godism is love. This doctrine is the central one, similar to the head that moves the rest of the body, and hence it is termed head-wing thought. (164-194, 1987.5.15)

Our aim is to secure victory. The question then arises: how will we be victorious? We need to triumph through the head-wing thought of Godism, and so I am the only one who can win in this. Head-wing thought exists to resolve the right- and left-wing ideologies. While Jesus was being crucified, the robbers

that were crucified along with him on his right and left quarreled with each other. This situation must not be repeated in this era, when everything is being brought to fruition worldwide, centering on God and the True Parents. What this means is that centering on the doctrine of the True Parents and God there shouldn't be any conflict between the right and left wings. Then, through what can these two wings be united? It is certainly not knowledge, money or power. They must come together and be motivated by love. Only when they are instructed to take action with words of love would they do so gladly and willingly. (169-210, 1987.10.31)

The only ideology that should remain is Godism, which provides us with the absolute ideal of love and the realm of heart for our brothers and sisters in all nations. Only Godism and no other should govern this world! Amen! (137-196, 1986.1.1)

## Section 4. The Future of the Democratic and Communist Worlds

### 4.1. Unifying the democratic and communist worlds

What is Godism? It is an ideology pertaining to our ancestors, an ideology that places ancestors first. It is also head-wing thought, which is like the ideology of the Parent, the mediator in the conflict between communism and democracy. Head-wing thought can be said to

be the ideology of the True Parent. Once people get to know the Parents of love, they let go and free themselves from one another's grasp, and instead unite. When they are provided with a place to sit or stand, and change into people who can live according to the great way of the heavenly principles without anyone's help or guidance, everything will be completed. The problem lies with people. There is plenty of money and land. So what is the problem? Human beings are the problem. (191-200, 1989.6.24)

Without the Divine Principle, it would have been impossible to present a counterproposal to communism, let alone overcome it. So, by what means could we overcome communism? It was through Godism. What is Godism? It is the Way of True Love, trying to give life again, again and yet again. As a consequence, this universe will become a place that overflows with God's love, more than enough to embrace the whole universe. (213-89, 1991.1.14)

What will be the final difficult challenge that we will be faced with in this world? It will be the separation of the Oriental and Western cultures. The issue at hand, therefore, is how we can unite East and West. Human efforts alone would not be enough to achieve this. In uniting the left and right wings, the endeavors of one side, whether left or right, would not suffice. Instead, the head wing must emerge at this point, which is why we are talking about the emergence of head-wing thought. Humanism and



materialism, which assert human beings to be the greatest of all beings, would be of no use here. They would not be adequate at all. We need to revert to the path based on God's will and centered upon His original heart. The question is how we can present these issues to the world and connect the cultural backgrounds of the East and West, which are presently alienated from each other. Though the American people opposed me, we have reached the stage where they have no choice but to follow me. The same can also be said of the Western world. (168-112, 1987.9.13)

True peace for humanity cannot be attained by the right wing or left wing alone. The reason for this is that the fundamental motives of both right and left are not free from egoism. If people are self-centered and nationalistic, there will be everlasting conflicts of interest, and unity and peace could not possibly be found there. (164-194, 1987.5.15)

Communism and democracy are the left- and right-wing ideologies. What that means is that they are in the position of the brother ideologies of Cain and Abel. So a new ideology should emerge from the East as the way of the Parent. Centering upon the Parents and Asia, left and right must unite. The Way of the Parent is none other than head-wing thought. Thus, when the head wing tells the left and right, "You are wrong!" they will answer, "Yes, we are," and when it tells them, "Listen to me!" they will answer, "Yes, of course." Everything

will then work out fine. When told that what the parents are asserting is much better than what they are claiming, and that they should follow the parents, they will answer, "Yes." (168-60, 1987.9.1)

Since it is clear to us that the essence of communism is atheism, it goes without saying that the ideology that can overcome it is one that acknowledges and has its basis in God. We call this ideology Godism or head-wing thought. A worldview centered upon the absolute God is the most effective weapon that can liberate people from communism. This is because only the veritable truth that God exists can eradicate the falsehood that claims He does not exist. (168-237, 1987.9.21)

The path of restoration is not easy at all. Now is the era marking the end of left and right. As he breathed his last, between the thieves on his left and right, Jesus left behind on earth lasting parental grief. Thus, unless we, with the God-centered way of the Parent and head-wing thought, discuss the realm of unity at a place that is free from the accusations of the left or the right, and thus create an environment in which, instead of retreating, we continuously march forward, God's kingdom cannot be established. Such is the time now. In this sense, I have come forth with Godism and head-wing thought, and am working to digest the divisive left- and right-wing ideologies. (169-212, 1987.10.31)

What is head-wing thought that is

advocated by the Unification Church today? Godism is derived from it. What is head-wing thought? Left and right wings are in constant conflict because there is no head figure. Thus, if there were a head figure, it would be possible to combine the three ideologies of head-wing thought, left-wing thought and right-wing thought into an integrated whole. Isn't that so? Then what would be the central figure of this integrated ideology? However much you think this through, you will finally conclude that the head is the root of the entire nervous system and the central nerve of the body, and as such, nothing could be done without it. Then what, or who, would be the root of roots? No one knows the answer to this question. The root of roots is God: head-wing thought comes from God. (172-31, 1988.1.3)

Left-and-right-wing ideologies should get along with each other like twins who, even when they are held together in their mother's bosom and are made to share her milk, do not try to kick at each other but are willing to change places if need be. If Adam and Eve do not stand in the position of having loved in such a manner in God's bosom, His kingdom cannot emerge. That is why I went to the United States and included my enemies in laying the foundation for the traditions of God's kingdom in the enemy nation, and declared its commencement. The enemy which is mentioned in the Bible is not just one individual. It is a whole nation. (176-131, 1988.5.3)

You must follow only God and the True Parents and nothing else. Otherwise, you will not be able to establish the original heavenly tradition in the satanic world. Satan is not part of the heavenly tradition, so he cannot last long. As the time for this tradition is coming, his end is drawing near, and so the end for Kim Il-sung, the Soviet Union and even the United States will soon be in sight. Only my God-centered ideology will remain in this world as head-wing thought. It is the head wing. With the right wing on the right hand and the left wing on the left hand, standing on an equal level with each other, and the head wing on top to manage them both, all it will need will be for them to make a 180-degree turn. On the day that the left stands on the right and the right on the left, everything will be completed. (176-277, 1988.5.11)

The whole world, not just Korea, is in chaos due to the collapse of values. Up until this time, to such a world I have emphasized the importance of absolute values based on love, by way of conferences for international scholars; I have proclaimed head-wing thought and have guided this world to rectify the wrongs of the left and right wings, so that we could all advance into a new and better world. It is up to us to work hard to make it possible for our homeland of Korea to produce many world leaders, who can, in turn, lead this world into unity and peace, creating a paradise on earth. We should strive to achieve, through Godism and head-wing thought, not

only the unification of our homeland, but also the elimination of the cultural gap between East and West, as well as the economic gap between North and South. This is the first step in building a world of peace, where global humanity becomes one great extended family of true love. (195-52, 1989.11.3)

We need to reunify divided South and North Korea and bridge the economic gap that exists between the two states. We have to unify the cultures of East and West. We must do away with racial and cultural discrimination and become all-unifying. Through what then can we be united? The world has been deprived of the one absolute love, so once we are firmly established on earth through that love, the cries of opposition against the Unification Church are bound to disappear. All the peoples of this world, regardless of gender and age, would be enveloped as one body in this great blanket of love, and all the people in the spirit world would want to be wrapped up in this blanket as well! Thus, cosmic unification through the application of headwing thought is not just mere words, but something that will be accomplished! Amen! (195-122, 1989.11.5)

Socialism and communism aspire to establish the one absolute nation. The era of the restoration of ownership based on God's ideal will soon arrive, and Satan, in coming to know of this in advance, planned to completely remove God's ownership over the world through communism. Satan did all he could. I

was the one who undid his every action, and brought everything back to God's side. Those on that side have therefore all yielded to my logic and ideology. Now, there is nothing and no one who can stand in opposition before the True Parents and God. (229-156, 1992.4.11)

Even now, ownership remains a big problem, does it not? Communism and socialism make the nation the sole owner. Democracy makes the individual the owner. Then, who is the true owner, to whom the overall ownership should be handed over? The ownership of the whole world lies with God, which means that the world belongs to His children, who in turn belong to His family. Consequently, His children need to bring everything together so that the ownership of everything can be offered to Him. God, and only God, should be the sole original owner. Only when He has become the sole owner, with the sole ownership, and passes it down to the True Parents and through them to the children, can that right of decision over ownership truly belong to His world. (183-82, 1988.10.29)

Your possessions, children and spouse all do not belong to you. Standing in the position of the archangel, you need to pass through the era in which you must absolutely deny ownership over everything. Since we will soon be entering such an era, socialism, communism and other such ideologies of this age deny individuals ownership over anything. Instead, they speak of every-

thing as belonging to the nation or society. Korea is no exception, is it? You earn money just to have it taken by the state. Isn't that true? We are entering such an era. (200-303, 1990.2.26)

#### 4.2. Head-wing thought will rectify religion and philosophy

Differing philosophical views developed into different ideologies; from the viewpoint that claimed matter emerged first, there arose communism, and from the viewpoint that claimed the mind came first there arose democracy. In other words, historical materialism and the spiritual view of history came into existence. These differing views led to conflicts in history and purpose; however, all these views were incorrect, and so they need to be rectified. That is because these views had their origin with people who did not know that the mind and body are in a subject-object partnership. Those people have nowhere to go now because they always thought of the one as being separate from the other. Consequently, from their perspective, Godism and head-wing thought as advocated by me pose a big problem. When the leader appeared, it was not for its own sake. (201-17, 1990.2.28)

Head-wing thought is the perfected Adam-centered ideology. Due to the Fall, Adam failed to perfect himself. Thus, both Satan's and God's sides raised a son each in the hope of making their respective sons inherit Adam's position. This is what led ultimately to left and

right fighting each other for mastery. Such is the history of this world. Then what is head-wing thought based upon? In terms of the Divine Principle, the realms of indirect and direct dominion failed to achieve unity. Through Adam fulfilling his responsibility, the realms of indirect and direct dominions will become one. Where will this union take place? It will occur when the tenth stage beyond the growing period has been attained. (202-270, 1990.5.25)

How can unification be achieved? Can you bring it about through brute force? It can never be achieved that way. Not one person will be brought around to take part in the process of unification forcibly. Then how should we go about it? The answer is to live altruistically, to give that which is most precious: love, life and lineage. Those actually carrying this out actively are Unification Church members. What is the Unification Church? How can unification be brought about and through what ideology? Through Godism or the Way of the True Parent, which is also head-wing thought. (202-334, 1990.5.27)

The many ideologies which came into existence up until this time failed to keep to one unchanging direction. The United States as well as the Soviet Union, democracy and communism, all focused on themselves, and have continued thus to this very day. The same is also true of religion: the direction taken by religion is not the one desired by God. Whatever the time or age, the

many religious denominations failed to keep the same course, and instead spread out in all directions. Until now, not one organization, leader or nation, held the course desired by God. Therefore, from this day on, everything from the individual to the family, society, nation, world, universe and cosmos, should keep to one eternal and unchanging direction. The ideology that embodies this concept is head-wing thought, or Godism. (203-27, 1990.6.14)

When we consider the issue of East and West, we should not believe that democracy has emerged as the winner. There is nothing to democracy; it is just a method of explaining one form of politics. It is not based on any ideology. There is currently an ideological vacuum. Thus, from now on, we must educate the world about our ideology. We need to present to them Godism, or head-wing thought. We need an organization that can take the situation in hand and make our ideology into a system that can lead the world. The Unification Church alone is not enough. (203-117, 1990.6.23)

Why have all of you come here? You have come; you are fighting, and giving and giving again for the world. What you are doing is theoretically in accordance with God's principle of creation, and that is why the Unification Church is not falling back. Instead, we are moving forward and expanding. At present we are centered upon head-wing thought which embraces both the left

and right wings. This ideology has the capacity to bring even the spirit world to order through Godism. Achieving order in the spiritual and physical worlds and bringing into existence a world of true love represents God's ideal of creation in accordance with the Principle. (205-95, 1990.7.7)

The democratic world represents the right wing whereas the communist world represents the left. Both worlds are currently collapsing. The same can be said of the United States. Neither world has a central point to focus on. I have already proclaimed that what is needed at this time is head-wing thought and Godism. No form of humanism can stand before God. There can only be Godism, and no other. God, and God alone, is the absolute and eternal center. Only head-wing thought can be the center of all humankind. The true center for the spiritual and physical worlds can only be the Way of the True Parent. (205-261, 1990.9.9)

Even in the Bible it is written that in the Last Days your family members will be your own enemies. In the Last Days, your own family will turn into enemies. Why was such a paradoxical logic foretold? It was because everything must be reversed once. What would happen if the left and the right were turned through 180 degrees? That would be no light matter. The directions will be reversed. Hence, we need the ideology of the subject partner, namely, head-wing thought. Then what is head-wing thought? It is our guide to Godism. What would we

have to do once we have found Godism? We would have to start afresh with the ideology of peace. Godism will enable people to meet God and unite with Him through His love, and peace will flourish through this fresh start, thereby establishing the base for the beginning of His kingdom on earth. Those who have lived their whole life in love will, without a doubt, enter the world of eternity with no procedures or judgments to hinder them. (206-131, 1990.10.3)

Even the saints are standing at the roadside, unsure where to go. They cannot move on because they do not know the fundamentals. The founder of the Unification Church is, by contrast, walking straight forward into the presence of the King and reporting directly to Him. You should understand that this path is the standard set by the True Parents, and live in accordance with head-wing thought and Godism, and let it flourish in your life. Such is the ideal of mind-body unity! Amen! (206-224, 1990.10.7)

Through the death of Jesus, the left and right wings, as well as the realm of Barabbas, came into being. His was the death he did not want. He should have lived and brought unity in the world; instead, due to his untimely death, individuals, families, tribes and the nation of Israel have always been fighting. Thus, all these must be united. They must become one completely through head-wing thought and Godism. Satan is standing in front of the realm of Barabbas. (238-201, 1992.11.22)

## Section 5. When God-centered Sovereignty Is Restored

### 5.1. The world where God's will is fulfilled

We know that we have reached the point where it is futile to hope to establish a peaceful or unified world, in the true sense of the term, through human power, wisdom, culture or any other human attributes. Bearing this in mind, what is the central problem we are faced with in resolving the issue of world culture? Before anything else, what we need to clarify first is the question of whether God exists or not. On the day that all humankind becomes aware of the fact that God indeed does exist, they will subsequently come to understand clearly where His will is heading, and once this is the reality, then the world in which they live will become the ideal world of oneness and peace. (56-131, 1972.5.14)

It is only normal to sacrifice the small for the large. It is only wise for people to use what they have for a purpose that has greater value. That is the natural path for them to connect with the world. People yearn for the large rather than the small; they aspire for what is greater rather than for what is smaller. (35-278, 1970.10.25)

The Unification Church is different from others. It teaches us to love our siblings as we would our parents, and to love our tribe, race and nation as our brothers and sisters. We should be ready to leave our parents, if need be, to love

our nation. Furthermore, we should be prepared to forsake our nation to love the world. Moreover, we should be willing to renounce the world in order to love God. Seeking the path of love that sacrifices what is small and near to us for what is large and far away is the mainstream thought of the Unification Church. (100-79, 1978.10.8)

If the democratic world of today were to ask for the third liberation, wouldn't they demand the second liberation in the communist world? With this question in mind, we come to wonder: where will the new outlook or ideology come from that will serve as the standard-bearer and the basis for the second and third liberation? It cannot come from the human world. Although humankind has struggled and striven for thousands of years to bring about this liberation, as yet they have neither prepared the environment nor its content. Therefore liberation cannot be brought about by human beings alone. (33-224, 1970.8.16)

Would you rather be nationalists or globalists? Religion is not just about globalism. It follows a doctrine that strives not only for the good of humankind, but also for the good of God. Communism and democracy, on the other hand, strive for the good of human beings alone. So, between the doctrines that aspires for the good of both human beings and God, and the doctrine that aspires for the good of human beings alone, which would be better? Which is better: the doctrine that is for both God

and human beings, or the doctrine that is just for the servants, leaving out the master? That is why religion is good. (41-44, 1971.2.12)

What is the doctrine that will remain to the end? The movement that can love the world more than the nation or people, the movement that can love God more than any other, will affirm the ideology and doctrine that remains to the end. Thus, the issue at hand for us would be how we can follow that doctrine, which will present to the world a trans-racial movement that goes beyond the boundaries of nations and tries to find the way to that place where God can freely love humankind and have them practice trans-racial love. (53-24, 1972.2.4)

The ideology that will guide this world in the future will be the one that advocates saving the world, even if it means sacrificing one's own nation. When a country follows such a teaching, a nation and citizens that center upon such a new movement appear on earth. Then there would be realized a new world of hope which would lead to the realization of a unified ideal world. Those with limited national and historical views that fail to transcend traditional boundaries cannot inherit God's ideal world. (51-44, 1971.11.4)

The doctrine that can be reduced to one sole purpose is not a self-centered worldview. Instead, that worldview should encompass the world and all nations. Only such a doctrine can



result in one single purpose. It would not involve boasting of one's tribe from a position in isolation from the world; it would be one that exists for the sake of humankind. Everyone longs for a world based on such a doctrine. (36-175, 1970.11.29)

The yellow race is like the first son, the black the second, and the white the third; fights between these races can cease and unity can be achieved through Unification Thought, which originated in Korea. In this way, an ideal God-centered homeland can be established. From there, the world will be transformed into a world of peace, unity and victory. Thus, God's kingdom on earth would be built, and at the same time we would become one with Him. We need to have Him descend to the earth, and to attend Him as the Lord of the Kingdom of Heaven, and thus establish His unified kingdom on earth and in heaven. You must clearly know that this is the mission which has to be fulfilled by Unificationists. On such a foundation, we would finally become as one with our Parent and be able to live peacefully in heaven. (79-83, 1975.6.1)

What is the Unification Church? Where is it heading, with the right and left wings in its arms? It is guiding us to pass through this world of struggle and strife and enter a world of happiness, that of utopia, and to follow the path shown by God. This path is not a level one. What that means is that the Unification Church should not be equipped

only with a logical system that can take responsibility for all the failures and wreckage caused by various ideological systems. At the same time, the Unification Church should also be able to take all these failures into its arms and strive for a transcendent form of existence, based on a spiritual awareness that can move them vertically, centering on religion.

You need to understand that the Unification Church should have the capacity to systematically theorize humanistic ideologies such as humanism and materialism, as well as all the theisms of the past until now, and integrate all these ideologies into one. At the same time, its members should embody the one theology which incorporates spiritual reality and experience and can connect all religions transcending denomination from the vertical perspective. (162-102, 1987.3.30)

All problems would be solved if there were people who possessed the necessary qualifications to be of use to everyone, and whom the materialists and communists would look upon and say, "Those Unification Church members are thorough about everything, morally and conscientiously, inside and out. They are even more thorough than we communists, and we are in need of such people." Secular humanists would get to hear of them and declare, "Oh, I wish we had people like them in our association." Existing religious orders would see them and exclaim, "Dear me! Those Unification Church members are great people, far superior to us. If only they

were members of our order.” God would gaze upon them and exclaim, “Ah! They are people I absolutely need to have with me.” (162-102, 1987.3.30)

## 5.2. Seeking God’s nation

What are the characteristics of the nation you long for? It is dissimilar in every way to those you currently live in. You will have to say goodbye to those nations one day. If you are attached to them, then you have to know that you are attached to sinfulness. You know deep in your hearts that you were born as the descendants of fallen people who were not related to the original goodness that would have allowed the will of that nation to be linked to God’s will. (37-217, 1970.12.27)

Without a nation, there can be no nationality. Without a nation, there can be no basis upon which you can be registered. We need to create God’s nation, and be registered anew. We need to establish God’s kingdom on earth, and as the citizens who love the kingdom and its people, live on earth together with our tribes and family members as the victorious sons and daughters who have inherited the true lineage of the parents of goodness. Only after doing so can we enter God’s kingdom in heaven. This is the teaching of the Divine Principle. (58-145, 1972.5.22)

Only when there is a nation can the traditions that we should hand down to our descendants for thousands of gen-

erations to come, all the efforts we have made shedding blood and sweat, and all traces of glory, remain as they are on earth eternally, and the monument that celebrates God’s endeavors can be established on earth. Without a nation, all would have been in vain. If the nation God has sought does not appear, the crosses and culture of Christianity today will surely tumble into the river and burn up. You should understand that Satan is making a game of this; the real issue at hand is God’s nation. (55-339, 1972.5.9)

You need to receive love from the True Parents and God. However, without His nation you cannot freely receive His love. Originally Adam was just one individual, but he would have been the beginning of a nation. Only when we have a nation surpassing the satanic nations of the fallen world can we receive God’s love. At present, we are receiving love from Him by proxy; as yet we are not eligible to receive love directly from Him. Though we can receive love from the True Parents, we will have to establish a nation before we can receive love from God. Why is that the case? It is because Satan and his nations still exist. We need to climb above his foundation. You must clearly know that such is the path you need to follow. (90-116, 1976.10.21)

I am working for the providence of restoration. The work of unfolding God’s providence on the earth on the basis of worldly politics, economy and culture is unprecedented in history. More and

more scholars in the world are trying to learn the Korean language so that they can read all the volumes of my speeches in the original language. These words lose authority when translated or interpreted. Therefore, you should be able to read those words. Shouldn't you be able to read those volumes in the original language at least once? (161-289, 1987.2.26)

The homeland that we need to reclaim on earth is not an existing nation with a certain history and tradition. It is completely different in essence from those other nations. In order for us to be able to inherit such a nation that is on a completely different level from others we need to become citizens with the appropriate ideological leaning of a leader. That proactive ideology should be in accord with the ideology of the absolute Creator. To have a nation of the kind the Absolute Being would desire, its citizens should be united based on its sovereignty. It must come about based on such citizenship. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

What kind of a world would the original world be? It would not be a world where evil dwells; instead, it would be an eternal and unified world where people would be completely free from evil. Surrounded by overflowing, original love, they would forever sing of happiness. Has there ever been anyone who lived in such a place? Not even one person has dwelt there. Though many people pursued such a world throughout the course of history, as yet it has not been established on earth. There were many

who could describe that world with words, but not one of them ever succeeded in actually establishing it. (18-102, 1967.5.28)

In order for a nation to be formed, there must be sovereignty, citizenry and territory; the same is true of God's kingdom. In the place of its sovereignty are the parents, in the place of its citizenry the children, and in the place of the territory the nation. Of these, none can be left out. This is an iron rule. (35-279, 1970.10.25)

To establish a nation, there must be territory, citizenry and sovereignty. Then what is sovereignty? It means fundamentally forming a relationship with God. Therefore, those who rule over the nation should, after the citizens have fallen fast asleep, form a connection with God and conduct the affairs of state. In this manner, the rulers must be in oneness with their people. Once thus united, they must believe that everything placed before them is there not for their own use, but for the sake of the nation. Then their nation would prosper. (30-88, 1970.3.17)

Looking at a nation, you see that in order for it to take shape it must have sovereignty, citizenry and territory. When considering the matter of realizing God's kingdom on earth from this perspective, who would be its owner? Who would be its sovereign? Without a doubt God would be the sovereign. Who would be the citizens? Every person on

earth would be a citizen of the kingdom. Then where would the territory be? It would be the Earth. (96-15, 1978.1.1)

However large and expansive a society or nation may be, it should take after the structure of a human being. This is because God likes everything to take after His image. Then what do human beings like best? They like things that resemble them. Thus, the ideal nation should resemble humankind. Well, would it resemble us or not? It would resemble the people of heaven and earth. (26-183, 1969.10.25)

You should live every day with the thought in your mind that you are traveling to and fro, and taking part in this great work in the evil world of today as God's messengers, all because you were given the mission to become meritorious public servants in seeking out and founding that nation, all for the restoration of the homeland. If you don't, you will not be able to be recognized as dignified citizens of the nation to come. (50-255, 1971.11.7)

Do you think that Satan, after six thousand years of sucking God's life-blood, will meekly say, "Oh, this is my downfall," cast his eyes down, turn around and leave? Don't you find it hard to throw away even a piece of rag? Before you throw it, you would first turn it over and smell it to check that it has to be thrown away. Satan will not take his leave easily; on the contrary, he is fighting tooth and nail. Hence, we need to be aligned with the center. Even I would be defeated if I were to deviate from that. If a wrong direction is taken, there will be no development. (57-276, 1972.6.4)

Unification Church members need to step forward barefoot in order to establish the homeland. Do you think it will be possible to save this nation with what is left over after having eaten your fill? Do you think you will have the time or energy to worry about what you eat, wear or ride in? The Unification Church is the place to work hard, so let us go out as pioneers, barefoot and barehanded. (14-201, 1964.10.7)

## CHAPTER FOUR

# The Way in the Completed Testament Age

### Section 1. The Settlement of the Victorious Domain of True Parents

#### 1.1. Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages: restoration of the right of the eldest son, right of the parent and right of kingship

August 31, 1989, Kodiak, Alaska

Now that the vertical and horizontal eight-stage indemnity has all been completed, the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages could be performed on August 31, 1989, in Alaska, the most northerly location in the West. It is the northernmost place. On the first day of September, I declared “the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father” at the same place. The ideology centered on the Heavenly Father is simultaneously the ideology of salvation by love as well as the ideology of parental love. This parent-centered ideology is all about a life lived by giving love. Satan cannot oppose anything based on love. If he cannot oppose the path taken by the Unification Church, we can rapidly expand worldwide. (199-157, 1990.2.16)

There are eight stages in indemnity, namely on the levels of the individual,

family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God’s heart. These in turn lead to restoration in those same eight stages. This means that, through the vertical and horizontal courses of indemnity centered on love, everything can safely proceed in any direction. Once this connection with love is made, the sphere that is created is possessed by the domain of love. When this happens, nothing on earth can remain Satan’s possession and he will be banished at once. It will be the end for him. (199-188, 1990.2.16)

These eight months of January through August have all been part of a new era in 1989. It is now the end of August isn’t it? The course of global indemnity has been completed in these eight months. In connection with this we were able to hold many events last year, including the cross-cultural “exchange” Holy Blessing and the declaration of the Foundation Day for the Nation of the Unified World. Thus, all conditions of indemnity were fulfilled. In this way, everything was brought to completion in August. This includes the marine and water related activities. I have accomplished so much up to this point. (193-100, 1989.8.31)

The Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages signifies the restoration of the right of the eldest son. It was held after both the vertical historical course and the horizontal course of indemnity on the levels of the individual, family, people, nation and world – in short, the vertical and horizontal courses of indemnity in the eight stages – had been completed. It signifies the completion of the course of indemnity for all people of the world. All this comes to fruition through the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages.

We have entered an era when we can come together in harmony through love with no need for indemnification because, after the restoration of the right of the eldest son, it is embraced in the bosom of the parents. War and struggle to restore the right of the eldest son are no longer necessary in the realm of parental love. In order to initiate this, the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages must be performed. Through this ceremony, the children in the positions of the first and second sons can be forgiven by those in the position of the parents, and we can enter the next era of forgiveness of parents. (193-173, 1989.10.3)

The democratic era of today is to do with a philosophy of brotherhood. In relation to the Principle, this age is centered on Cain and Abel; the Principle corresponds word for word. Cain will have everything in his possession taken away by God in the end. Already he has been deprived of his head and body.

Now, with nowhere to go, he is trying to take over the democratic world centering on the proletariat. However, he is not having much success. With the coming of autumn, fruits have begun to ripen on the trees, but with no one to harvest them, they are being left to rot. Soon, his side will dwindle into nothingness. It is all about the restoration of brotherhood. The purpose of the philosophy of brotherhood is to find the true Adam. This work has been long in its undertaking. (205-178, 1990.9.1)

How would democracy, which has unfolded through a history of wars, be brought to an end? Democracy would naturally conclude with the advent of the parents, the coming of the parent-centered ideology. Hence, the Unification Church declared to this world that the era of the providence of salvation has ended and has given way to the era of the providence of restoration through love. Many religions are unaware of this truth. Pastors of established churches do not understand what is meant by the era of the providence of salvation by love or the era of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, do they? They wouldn't know what the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages is. (194-325, 1989.10.30)

Through assimilating the democratic and communist worlds based upon the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, we will enter the era of establishing the right of kingship. You need to understand this clearly. (193-212, 1989.10.4)

## 1.2. Restoration of the right of the parent and right of kingship through the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father

What is required to fulfill the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father? The answer is the God-centered family. Thus, at the time when God is working to achieve this Will, the greatest problem posed in both the communist and democratic worlds is the breakdown of the family. The communist world does not recognize the concept of the family. It treats the family as the basis of exploitation. It has no relationship whatsoever with God. The same is true in the democratic world. In fact, the reality is that everything concerned with the well-being of the family is on the decline. Although the family is the foundation of the society, nation and world, it has been in complete disarray until now. As such, once we have secured our basis through the family, we will automatically embrace the right and left wing worlds. (194-113, 1989.10.17)

Now the era of the absolute family is upon us. Without the family, the concept of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father cannot be established. This ideology is a path we need to take. It is similar to crossing a bridge. Because God's unified nation can only be achieved based on the family, hence, absolute emphasis must be placed on the family. In the family, the parents must be served as if they were the absolute God. Just as God's dual characteris-

tics are eternally united, so His internal character and external form can never be separated from one another. Next, the children themselves should unite, just as Adam and Eve should have been completely united, without having fallen. (194-122, 1989.10.17)

All levels from the individual to the cosmos must connect with the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father in order to restore right of kingship based on the family; this signifies the restoration of cosmic right of kingship. It cannot be achieved without the family, for that is the center. Through the foundation of Adam's united family, the harmonized tribe of Adam must be established. Wouldn't Adam have had a tribe? Based on the foundation of the unified family of the Adamic figure, his nation has to be unified and extended to the cosmos. Only thus can right of kingship be restored through the foundation of the unified Adamic family. (194-115, 1989.10.17)

Through the declaration of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, we are to enter the era of a unified sovereignty. God must be upheld as the Sovereign. Then we could be proud of the one God-centered sovereignty. After establishing the unified kingdom desired by Jesus and God, and doing away with the hell that exists both in the spiritual and physical worlds, we could enter the era of omnipotence through love, in which God would have direct dominion over us. By following the traditions of love, we would learn the meaning of God's



vertical love and how we can be united through it through our daily lives. Then we would rise above the world which has rejected these traditions throughout all its nations and in the spirit world then the era of liberation and unification would automatically come. (193-309, 1989.10.8)

Originally, if Adam and Eve had become perfect, the Father and Mother of God's kingdom would have been perfected. Then they would have become the owners of the original family, and consequently the sovereignty of heaven on the family level would have been established. In this manner, Adam and Eve would have become sovereigns on the levels of the individual, the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and the world. We have now arrived at the time when we can rise above the national level, and able to impact the sovereignties of the satanic world, establishing the new sovereignty of the heavenly world. This was achieved on March 27, 1990. From this day forward, the world will turn with the wind I have been stirring up. (201-130, 1990.3.27)

Heavenly Father! With the coming of the 1980s, we welcomed the historic epoch in which we were able to convert the course of the providence of salvation to the course of the providence of salvation by love. After fulfilling the course of indemnity for resentment between brothers that is, the Cain and Abel positions we could enter the era of the liberation of brothers, which ultimately

formed the foundation for the era of the liberation of parents. Centering upon the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages, the era of the Heavenly Parent was proclaimed, and going beyond the era of the ideal providence, we cleared away the mountain of resentments in the providence of restoration for the physical and spiritual worlds. Now, in the 1990s, we are faced with the solemn and historic task of transforming this world and everything in it into a unified world of your providential domain through the dedication of Unificationists. (196-146, 1990.1.1)

With Heung-jin's passing into the heavenly world, we have arrived at the time when he and Jesus can unite in bringing together all the saints and sages of Christianity. We can cross the borderline dividing North and South Korea and bring about reunification. It has been possible to proclaim the era of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father and the era of the providence of salvation by love.

We have now conquered the summit of this world of death and entered the era when we can come into contact with the heavenly realm. We are aware that a new era centered exclusively on the heavenly spirit world can only begin in the providential time when the spirit world can communicate on an equal basis with the physical world. This requires a foundation of unity of all the tribes of the Unification Church members. Please, Heavenly Father, be with Heung-jin in his endeavors and devotion in bringing

together good men and women, kings and patriots representing the sovereignties of the 120 nations, educating them to fulfill their duties of loyalty and filial piety to you. In this way, heavenly law in the spiritual and physical worlds can be established. Amen! (196-257, 1990.1.2)

## Section 2. Complete Providential Settlement and the Great Proclamation of the True Parents

### 2.1. Proclamation of the True Parents (Messiah)

April 30, 1990, Korea

How is it that I was able to proclaim the True Parents? The democratic and communist worlds represent the brothers Abel and Cain. Though these two worlds are like two sons, they are fighting with each other. Since I now stand in a position from which I can make peace between these two hostile sons and be welcomed by both, I could finally come to Korea with the special authority of the Parent and proclaim Mother and myself as the True Parents to the whole nation. (204-187, 1990.7.8)

The world is one in which nothing can be trusted, one that doesn't bear being looked at and one that is filled with despair, but its one real hope has appeared with the emergence of the True Parents. I proclaimed this in Korea. (202-340, 1990.5.27)

The purpose of the Bible is to seek out the one True Parent. That is the

most hopeful gospel. Since Satan was also a created being, he will disappear with the appearance of the True Parents. Since that time is close at hand, communism has collapsed and North Korea is on the verge of collapse. Whichever way they look there is no solution.

I am fully aware of this. Now God's kingdom will come to fruition and the liberation of hell on earth and in the spirit world will take place. (202-351, 1990.5.27)

Our purpose is to liberate God and save humanity and all that belongs to the satanic realm. This is our goal. We are proclaiming such a true parental heart. We are marching forward. There is no place for Satan here. Such is the view of the Principle. (202-354, 1990.5.27)

Communism is an ideology of servants and masters. There is no freedom. Democracy, however, is based on a philosophy of brotherhood. Thus, everyone has freedom to pursue their self-interest, and as a result they are constantly fighting one another, each claiming to be superior to the others.

In contrast, head-wing thought is based on a parent-centered ideology. Aren't senators clashing with congressmen and Republicans with Democrats? That is because they do not have Parents. Once the Parents emerge and reprimand them, saying, "You scoundrels! Why are you fighting? You are not servants; you are all our children!" then everything will be resolved. Racism between blacks and whites and all races

will also be resolved in this way. (202-357, 1990.5.27)

How is the communist world faring? I told Gorbachev to take down the statues of Lenin and Marx. In the whole history of communism, there was no one but myself who dared to say such things. The communist leaders of the Soviet Union clamored, "How dare he talk of Godism in front of us? How dare he speak so arrogantly?" Regardless of how much they hated me, the communist world declined to its present situation. The person they feared the most in the world became their only hope. There is no other hope for them. So I told them plainly, "Listen to my words and follow, for there is no other way to go." (202-351, 1990.5.27)

What is going to become of this world? History has progressed through the eras of the first, second and third Israel, but now with the announcement of the name of True Parents, this entire world will become like the Garden of Eden and all the traditions of the sphere of religion will disappear. As a result, all the spirits in the heavenly world will be able to come to earth whenever they want. This is called the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. Heaven and earth will be as close as the pages of a book, as though the physical world was directly connected to the spirit world.

By my proclaiming sovereignty of the parent, these two worlds are reconnected and Satan will disappear. Hence,

the spirits can come whenever they please. The spirit world is in a vertical position and the earth is in a horizontal position. The two worlds are perpendicular to each other. A right angle is not the domain of Satan. The fallen world emerged when this original perpendicular relationship was altered. God can have dominion only over the places where right angles are formed. At such places, Satan cannot be found. That is where liberation takes place. The spirit world is liberated, as are the earth and all of creation. At that place the course of indemnity need not exist. (202-358, 1990.5.1)

By my making public the declaration of the True Parents, Satan's authority and all the laws of indemnity which have caused religious struggles will disappear. Then all the good spirits will be on a par with the angelic world, whereby they will freely render assistance to earthly people, freeing this world from the effects of the Fall. Your ancestors will be able to work like the angels. Therefore, all kinds of phenomena will happen to those who oppose the providence. (202-358, 1990.5.27)

Today I am proclaiming the truth about the Messiah. After opening a wide path for everyone's liberation, including your mothers, fathers and yourselves, and proclaiming the right of kingship, I am also proclaiming the True Parents. The True Parents represent individual and family-level right of kingship. This is the way it is. They are the sovereigns

as well as the True Parents. They are being proclaimed as such to the whole world. They are manifesting true love. (202-358, 1990.5.27)

You need to become bold. What I mean by this is that you need to exercise the rights of ownership of a subject partner. However difficult your situation, it should not be a big problem for you. When you say, “Not even God wants this. Be gone!” then it will be quickly gone. The same is true in the spirit world. If you were to say, “I don’t want this!” then it will vanish. Such a power is all around you. Once the center of love appears, everything will turn around to head for it. When the morning sun rises in the East, doesn’t all nature focus and turn towards the sun? Such is the essence of life and the essence of love. (202-358, 1990.5.27)

From now on, everything will connect to you automatically without a struggle. All paths will open. Through exercising the right of ownership you can become true teachers and true parents. That is your mission. It all depends on how hard you work. This is a logical and clear conclusion. It is now up to you to understand this clearly and say, “I will completely inherit all that the True Parents have proclaimed and liberate everything in the world!” Do you want to do so? If you do, make a vow before God. Raise both your hands and wave them like this. Ah, that looks good; it looks like a rolling wave! (202-360, 1990.5.27)

## 2.2. Declaration of God’s Eternal Blessing (*Chil Il Jeol*: 7.1. Day)

July 1, 1991, Hannam-dong Residence, Seoul

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is July 1, 1991. We understand that the year 1991 is the very last crucial moment in the dispensational transition period. From the very first day of this year until the end of June, we have persevered through many complications and difficulties, and are now finally entering the month of July. Now that the first half of 1991 has passed, we understand that the second half of this year is the time in your providential history when we can reach the summit of new hope to enter the world of freedom and peace in Your kingdom.

Now, the resentments caused by the North-South division of the Korean peninsula and all the suffering and struggle brought about by East-West complications have all been dissolved by the True Parents. All historical conflicts sown by the false parents have been victoriously overcome by the True Parents, and the era has arrived in which the communist and free worlds, and North and South Korea, can unify. Heavenly Father! Thank you for allowing me to perform the Declaration Ceremony of God’s Eternal Blessing on this day, bringing to a culmination the sacrificial effort You have offered, together with everything representing Your providential history, and thus celebrate together this day of victory, liberation and glory.

The overall meaning of providential history dictates that without having ful-

filled the mission of tribal messiah, one's family and nation cannot be connected to the providence. We are so grateful to be able to welcome this day on which we can declare ourselves to be tribal messiahs. We are truly grateful that as of this day we are free to proclaim ourselves as the kindred of the True Parents.

We are thankful that you protected each of our courses of faith up to this point, and that as of this day, July 1, 1991, we are finally able to eliminate the grievous course of historical indemnity. We are aware that now is the time of declaration to reclaim the liberated world of original nature. This world will emerge when the left and right wings unite and when North and South Korea, plus the religious realm and the political realm inherit right of kingship in the parental realm, attending the Creator God and the horizontal True Parents who are the original parents.

We should not stop there, however; centering upon the true love of original nature, we should fulfill the obligations of true love, which is the center for the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and the whole universe. We understand that by so doing, we must become the foundation for the families living on earth who are the representatives of Your kingdom as originally intended. This is the absolute purpose and goal following the one absolute direction. In order to bring this to pass, we have been issued the order to advance and carry out this solemn task, which means breaking through in the local neighborhood activities (*tong-ban gyeokpa*).

With this in mind as the final destination, all of us should realize that from the first of July we are entering a new era of world history when we should march forward in full force to save our families and our tribes. Moreover, I have designated this day, the first day of July, to be the one on which we can apply and declare ourselves to be tribal messiahs across the world. All those who have applied to become tribal messiahs should not look to one side or look back, but, rather, follow the destiny You have given them directly and fulfill their missions as Blessed Families. This is to first restore and establish in their families the standards of the right of the eldest son, right of the parent and right of kingship that were lost by Adam and Eve, and then firmly establish a victorious legacy that no one, not even Satan, can affect in any way. Please help us to never forget that such is the mission given for each Blessed Family to fulfill.

In Your presence, there is no free world or communist world, no South or North, and no Satan. I declare in the name of the True Parents to both the spiritual and the physical worlds that all the works of evil will be cleared away and buried forever alongside fallen history, and that Your victorious and liberated kingdom will be established on earth. I therefore beseech You to let us become a shield for all generations to come. I proclaim this in the name of the True Parents at this time on this day of the first of July! Amen! I proclaim this in the name of the True Parents! Amen! I proclaim this in the name of the True Parents!

Amen! Amen! Amen! (218-7, 1991.7.1)

By concluding the ceremony of *Chil Il Jeol*, we inaugurate the era in which the True Parents can do as they please. Until this time, I was not free to do as I pleased. If I could have done all that I wanted to do, why would I have suffered? Why would I have acted so powerlessly before the world? There is a time for everything. Without fulfilling my responsibility with regard to time, I cannot lift up my face and lead others. (218-16, 1991.7.1)

I must prevail over the satanic realm. Now, with the name of True Parents, I can triumph over persecution on the levels of the individual, the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and world. Although both the communist and free worlds have opposed the Unification Church and Rev. Moon, by educating Soviet leaders in Washington, D.C. in the free world, I am the victor in the end. (218-19, 1991.7.1)

The authority of the True Parents and God are the only things that can be on the rise. Therefore, others have now lost the power to overstep their authority. If they continue to carry on forcibly as they have done in the past, they will only collapse. If such a thing were to take place in Korea, then both North and South would ultimately perish. No single leader, whether from the North or the South, has the power to have his own way in everything. Thus, this proclamation must be made. Up until now,

false parents have been in charge, but the time has come for the True Parents to bring everything together in a proclamation, which should be made this very day. (218-32, 1991.7.1)

### 2.3. Declaration of the elimination of historical indemnity

November 1, 1996, Uruguay

Families must be restored by the Family Federation for World Peace. The returning Lord must bring to completion within the global domain the task that ended in failure in the domains of family and nation. How can he restore on the world level that which was lost by Adam's family, then connect it to the global Blessing, establish it in the position of Adam's family, construct God's global nation, and ultimately enter the era of unified right of kingship, the era of the unity of heaven and earth? You need to bear in mind that an era of great transition has begun. Centered on the True Parents and based on the democratic world as Cain and the Christian cultural sphere as Abel, we have been able to surmount all opposition to the good fortune of the families of the Unification Church. With victorious supremacy thus attained on the family level, then the settlement of the Family Federation for World Peace and the elimination of historical indemnity could be proclaimed in the name of the True Parents.

The Fall was brought about by free sex and so it can only be overcome through absolute sex – having one eternal spouse of the opposite sex – centered on the

absolute love of the True Parents. The conversion of lineage can only take place with absolute sex; it cannot be achieved by free sex or casual sex. The restoration of lineage must be carried out. Through the declarations I made with the Family Federation for World Peace, I have established the authority on which this can be brought to fruition worldwide. Based on all the victories achieved by the True Parents within the global domain, the Blessed Families in the stead of the True Mother, then Cain and Abel, must unite with her. In short, they need to become as one with her.

The impact on families of juvenile immorality, free sex and homosexuality can only be reversed on the basis of the True Parents' ideology, through which the restored family, nation, and world can advance to establish God's kingdom on earth and in heaven. This means that everything must be completely turned around. On the Blessed Family foundation, individuals and families representing Cain and Abel must unite centering absolutely on the True Parents, first becoming as one with True Mother. Centering on her, the democratic and communist worlds, Catholics and Protestants, and the spiritual and physical worlds can be united. On this global foundation, everything could then be indemnified centered on Mother. Thus, it became possible to proclaim the settlement of the Family Federation for World Peace and the elimination of historical indemnity.

In His act of creation, God practiced absolute faith, love and obedience; how-

ever, the couple that was to be His object partners failed to achieve that position and consequently fell into hell. We are now living at a time when we are to restore globally that which was lost in Adam's family. Standing on the foundation of absolute faith, love and obedience achieved in the victorious realm of the True Parents, Unification Church members need to practice absolute faith, love and obedience centering on them. Since the True Parents inherited God's tradition of absolute faith, love and obedience, you also need to inherit that. Do you understand? May God's blessings be with you! (280-47, 1996.11.3)

#### 2.4. Declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Chil Pal Jeol*: 7.8. Day)

August 9, 1997, Seoul

On this 7th day of the 7th lunar month in 1997 at 7 minutes and 7 seconds past 7 o'clock, by accomplishing the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing, we have fulfilled our motto for this year, which was to be proud of and to love the True Parents absolutely by successfully completing the Blessing of 360 Million Couples. Heavenly Father, how much anguish You have had to harbor in Your heart!

Heavenly Father, we of the Unification Church know only too well the historical truth that all cultures of East and West have been lost to You. The homeland that should have been the central nation of all nations through the unifi-



cation of North and South Korea, and all of Your children, who should have inherited the Blessing and become a part of Your tribe of heaven, stood instead in a position with no choice but to be divided into two. For this reason we have had to walk the path of restoration for a period of forty years, engaged in the conflict between communism and democracy.

Because this period of forty years represents four thousand years of providential history, the persecution perpetrated by the sovereign nations of the satanic world against Christianity, Christian states, and believers of all other religions and faiths during that period manifested during those forty years as opposition and oppression from the whole world against the True Parents who were endeavoring to fulfill Your will on the world stage. No one knew of Your sorrow as You watched this history of forty years. You have had to pioneer this path all alone with no one to help You. However, under Your guidance, we persevered through the forty years of suffering and hardship, engaged in the battles to prepare Your abode of the Sabbath on the levels of the individual, couple, family, tribe, nation, world, and the cosmos. This was in order to develop a free environment based on the ideal of creation wherein You can reside with perfect freedom.

Now at last we have completed this history of forty years, Heavenly Father, enabling us to welcome an amazing new era in which today we can proclaim the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath centering on the True Parents.

Today, Your son by the name of Moon celebrates his seventy-seventh year in this world. The era has come in which we can connect the Sabbath year with the number of a new beginning, rising above the numbers seven and eight by connecting eight number sevens based on 7 minutes 7 seconds past 7 o'clock of the 7th day of the 7th lunar month in 1997, and my 77 years of age. Now, therefore, Unification Church members can form families inheriting the heavenly authority and traditions of love, and thus attend You and offer You a dwelling place on the levels of nation, world and cosmos. Through these families, the foundation of the Sabbath in which You and the True Parents can freely come and go will be connected from the family to the cosmos. The time is close at hand when we will cross the boundary that separates us from the simultaneous establishment of Your right of kingship on earth and in heaven, which will allow us to achieve complete oneness with You. In such a manner this work has been accomplished.

To fulfill this undertaking, the mother representing the nation that can take the place of the Eve nation should come on earth. Centering on the United States as the archangel nation, as well as the United Nations, the fortune that will unify North and South Korea needs to be prepared in the United States and then sown in Korea so that Korea can be the nation that can represent the liberation of all peoples. However, You eased our concern on this matter, for under Your protection True Mother embarked on a

third speaking tour, and visited sixteen places, thereby surmounting the number sixteen and opening the doors wide for the passage of the dignitaries of this nation. You have bestowed on us such a blessing which has allowed the holiness of Blessed Families to be known nationwide.

Moreover, through the women of North and South Korea, True Mother has been welcomed to the worldwide conferences for women representing the northern and southern hemispheres. On that basis we can enter into the era of family right of kingship within Your victorious domain, based on the accomplishment of the number sixteen and the successful world conferences. This era can be proclaimed tomorrow, August 10, to the leading figures of this nation and the leaders representing the sovereignties and nations of the world. By the grace of your endeavors this blessing could be granted to this nation, and the blessed realm established, with the Unification Church leading the way through its Blessed Families. We are truly grateful for Your great work in collaboration with True Mother in preparing such a foundation for us. If this had not come to pass, there would have been no place for Korea in this world.

Furthermore, no words can express our gratitude to You for allowing us to establish and proclaim upon this foundation the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth centered on the True Parents.

Heavenly Father, please take pleasure in welcoming this era in which You can

be liberated from imprisonment, and in this state of liberation embrace Your loving cosmos, through the establishment of the Sabbath foundation of the eras of the right of kingship in the family, nation, world and cosmos, which has been Your long-cherished desire.

We are aware of how much You grieved over not being able to help this son of Yours in his work, since all that You could do was shed tears and watch over his path. We beseech You with all of our hearts to bestow on us Your blessings, that You may achieve total, overriding, supreme and full authority as You have desired, and with the whole world under Your dominion we may march forward into Your liberated kingdom.

Now the era has come when the stains created by tears of sorrow shed by the family of the True Parents will fade away. With the achievement of Your authority of liberation, the family of the True Parents can attain the privileged and highest position of the ideal of creation looking down over the beloved children, nations, world and cosmos, with the freedom to travel anywhere in the world.

Therefore, please accept this proclamation which I am now making in the name of the True Parents, as contributing to the resolution of Your grief and sorrow, and to Your full liberation. At this hour, please accept with joy the proclamation of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Please proclaim this from heaven in order that the banner of victory of the harmonized realms on earth

and heaven may fly high. I proclaim this day in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (286-78, 1996.11.11)

You need to understand that in all the historical ages up to the present time there has never been a Sabbath day for God. It is dumbfounding. Before now, everything in the entire growth period belonged to Satan: three times three is nine. There was not one thing that belonged to God, neither His son nor daughter, neither creation nor the nation. Everything was lost through the Fall of Adam and Eve. God wanted them to become the ancestors of humanity, representing God's lineage as His ideal object partners. The ideal family is God's house of the Sabbath. We need to understand more clearly about the nature of His dwelling place. (286-112, 1997.8.9)

God lost His house of the Sabbath. Therefore, the ideal family raised in the fallen world would restore His house of the Sabbath. Then, centering on what would this house be built? It would be built centering on true love, true parents, true children and true family. The family is the center. Centering on the family you need to form a tribe, and on that basis become tribal messiahs for that tribe. The family gives rise to family-level messiahs, tribal messiahs, national messiahs for the nations and the global messiah. The global messiah is also the King of kings. From there the Kingdom of Heaven is established. God should be able to reside wherever He goes, from within the individual to any place in the

world and even in the spirit world. That is to say, if He chose to dwell within a family, the individuals in that family, husband and wife, and sons and daughters would all be happy to serve Him. (286-114, 1997.8.9)

Where is the dwelling place for the True Parent? Where can he reside? That place is the center of the universe, and at the same time, the position of the prince who has the right of kingship on the basis of which God can be enthroned. It is the place that connects the position of the heavenly prince with the position of the earthly prince based on the qualification of being a true parent. However, this connection is not forged by money.

If I had a weakness for money, I would have become a rich man in Korea. If I had a preoccupation with knowledge, I would have become the chancellor of Seoul National University before anyone else. Don't you think I could have done so, given that there are university presidents whom I have taught and inspired to become my followers? I've made disciples of people who are regarded as great in this world; yet I freely push them along. There are former heads of state working with me. In other words, I have enough power not to crave worldly knowledge, money or authority. What power would that be? It is the power of love, God's love, true love! (286-98, 1997.8.9)

In Korea everything can be found, even things that cannot be found in the families of other nations in the world. Korean folk songs are universal, with

universal contents which transcend history. “Moon, Oh Moon, you bright Moon, Moon loved by the poet Lee Tae-baek! Oh Moon, on you grows a laurel tree. I want to chop it down with a jade ax, and trim the branches with a gold ax to build a thatched cottage, to bring my parents to come and live with me forever.” How splendid this is! To live for thousands and tens of thousands of years together! Which parents are being referred to here? There is no other nation in the world whose folk songs praise and pay respect to parents, who are yearned for in such dreams as this. (286-103, 1997.8.9)

Live forever together. Even though the house which is built may only be a small cottage, the song expresses the desire to live forever together with True Parents! It coincides perfectly with the ideal of the children’s songs of Korea. Then what would they do next? A half-moon! It is all right even if the moon is not a full moon. Although the family does not begin with perfection, this world is like a half-moon, and we are heading towards a nation of clouds in the sky, on a satellite like the boat mentioned in the song. Though we have neither mast nor paddle, we are moving swiftly to both the East and West.

The sun rises in the East and shines westward. Man symbolizes East and woman West, and all women will receive the light of the sun from the east and be on an equal status with men. Then a world of equality and agreement between East and West will be realized!

Amen! How wonderful that people will be! (286-114, 1997.8.9)

What is today? It is the Declaration Day of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. The Parents of Heaven and Earth. (286-123, 1997.8.9)

Such a world will be established when the ideal realm of the Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth comes into being! The word “Amen” is made up of two syllables, the first, “A-” signifying that I am grateful even when I have my mouth open wide for a thousand years, and the second, “-men,” signifying that I will live even after I have passed away, because the place where you say “Amen” is one where you feel good just thinking about it, dreaming about it, working for it, sweating for it, with nothing bad and everything good in it. (286-118, 1997.8.9)

Then we will be stamped with the seal of God, become a royal family, the citizens of His kingdom who can enter its palace and reside there for thousands of years and in so doing fulfill all the desires and hopes of humanity. (287-108, 1997.8.9)

## 2.5. Proclamation of the liberation of hell and the opening of the gates of heaven

May 15, 1998, Americano Hotel, Pantanal, Brazil

Whereas Heung-jin is a child of direct descent from the True Parents, Christianity stands in the position of

the adopted child from another lineage. Only when these two are united can the True Parents stand up completely straight on a firm foundation.

Thus, the will of the True Parents can be fulfilled only when Christianity receives the Blessing and becomes as one with Heung-jin, who is already blessed. Accordingly, it follows that the Unification Church should begin in earnest to conduct the Blessing for Christian denominations. Centering on the True Parents, the father, mother, and the realm of the firstborn must all become one. Furthermore, the father, the mother, the realm of the adopted child (Christianity), other religions, and the non-religious realm must also unify.

With the Blessing of the 120 million couples on June 13, one-third of the 360 Million Couples will have been blessed, and so we will have transcended the Old Testament Age. Thus, no time must be lost in performing the ceremonies of rebirth, resurrection and eternal life, which are also part of the Blessing ceremony. Already the four saints have been blessed, and at Cheongpyeong devotions are being offered for the liberation of Christianity. The key to the liberation of the realm of the fourth Adam lies with the True Parents. The truth of the matter is that the spirit world must be taken care of before the physical world. Hence, effort is being made to take care of the ancestors.

The order of the providence is such that the spirit world must be set right before the physical world. This is because the spirit world stands perpendicular to

the physical world, which is a world of horizontal relationships. When the vertical and horizontal worlds meet, true peace will be achieved on earth. If the True Parents had not come, it would have been as if the spirit world did not exist at all. This is because the spiritual and physical worlds can only be corrected by the True Parents.

## 2.6. Ceremony for the Total Liberation of the People in the Spirit World

October 5, 1998, São Paulo, Brazil

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is October 5, 1998, which is also Chuseok in Korea, a day of celebration on which the people honor their ancestors. You have worked endlessly to establish the realm of liberation for the Old, New and Completed Testament ages in history to ease Your grief over not having seen this world become a settlement of love, in which all forms of creation, all people in the spirit world, countless believers, and all things created with love and living on earth would have lived together with You. Today, before heaven and earth, Cheongpyeong in Korea, and the people gathered here in São Paulo in the western world, please bring to an end the sorrowful history that You have had to endure.

We understand that You as the vertical True Parent of heaven created the horizontal true parents in this world through the ideal of heaven and earth, that they represented Your external form, and that they should have become

our ancestors of the very first generation. They were meant to achieve complete oneness through their family, thereby unifying their minds, which are vertical, and their bodies, which are horizontal, and thus bring the seed of love created through that unity to complete fruition on earth. Through this achievement, Your eternal lineage and that of True Parents were to be connected, and would have led to the multiplication on earth of children whose minds and bodies would have been as one. However, the joyous day of such a beginning of history did not come to pass, and You have had to continue with the providence in order to erase the legacy of lamentable and mortifying historical grief; we are aware of all this.

No one until now had any inkling of the anguish You harbored in Your heart, and as You haven't had a single son or daughter on earth who could be devoted to You, You have been a lonely and miserable Father.

Looking into Your heart, I know how You endeavored to save Your only son who came after countless generations. This son of Yours perceived more clearly than anyone how much You grieved as You looked upon wretched humanity, dispossessed of any ancestors because they were lost through the Fall.

From the day I came to know You, I also came to realize that the path You have followed for the sake of Your immature children has been one of ordeals and suffering. You have worked ceaselessly in order to welcome the day of the Blessing of the True Parents centered on the

foundation which was laid through the toils of Christianity during thousands of years of history. You labored so that the path could be evened out and You could restore the unity of Adam and Eve which had failed to emerge with Your true love, in order to bequeath the victorious lineage of Adam's original family which was lost in the Garden of Eden.

Ashamed of becoming a child with unfulfilled responsibility, I searched endlessly for a way to avoid this failure, and I came to pioneer the way I should walk in following Your path, building bridges and climbing mountains, passing through the eight stages vertically and horizontally, and finally proclaiming the fulfillment of those eight stages and proclaiming True Parents. As a result of this, I declared *Chil Pal Jeol* (Day of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth) and at the same time, on the foundation of Jardim, I disclosed that Your ideal of creation and the original standard that You had first established was that of absolute faith, love and obedience. Also, in order to make Your wish come true – that is, to establish the absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal family foundation, which reflects Your characteristics, and the foundation wherein love can dwell – then what must be achieved are absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal parents, who are also true parents, as well as absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal children, couples and families. Though the world may not be aware of it, this son understands that the day upon which this is brought to pass will be the day

You have long awaited and will be the greatest transition point of history. Yet despite the fact that the coming of this day should be the subject of worldwide rejoicing and celebration, I am forced to make this proclamation within the confines of Jardim.

Through this third Jardim declaration, You could be connected to the first, second and third creators and to the tribal foundation. On this horizontal foundation and on the basis for Your right of kingship on earth and in heaven, the authority of the third creator was proclaimed on earth. By passing through this liberating process which cannot be interfered with by even God or Satan, the eternal, unchanging and predestined relationships between parents and children, husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters, which had remained until this time unfulfilled, were all resolved.

Now, through the *Sa-Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day) declaration, which represents the number four, the southern hemisphere can be connected to the northern hemisphere and the heart of the Parents to the oceans. Although the great judgment of Noah's time took place on the sea, based on the sea that did not face judgment and the principle of giving and receiving by all created beings, then all national messiahs and Blessed Families were called to gather here in Jardim in order to symbolize the coming together of all creation to the place of liberation. I have disclosed to all those who are here that, in the form of the global messiah, national messiahs, tribal and family messiahs, they should return following

the Parents.

Thank you, Heavenly Father, for guiding us as the True Parents in creating the path that could form an easy passage free of any obstacles, through the transfer of the victories achieved on every side. Thank you for allowing the Blessed Families the free environment where they can seek the path to the homeland based on parents, children, couples, siblings and families which exhibit the four great attributes of absoluteness, uniqueness, immutability and eternity. This can be achieved by virtue of the practice of absolute faith, love and obedience. I am grateful to You for letting us march forward as the blessed members of the Unificationist community, whose mission now is that of unifying the separated spiritual and physical worlds, transcending the East-West cultural divide, as well as the North-South economic divide, and establishing a peaceful heaven and earth and humanity with the heart of children who serve the Parents of Your unified kingdom.

We know that it is the task given to us as Your blessed sons and daughters and all those who are heading to the blessed place to take the lead in restoring Your lost kingdom of peace, even if it means selling every asset and property we possess. It is our responsibility to strive for the nation with all our family as the offering, and then for heaven and earth with the nation as the offering, and finally towards You with heaven and earth as the offering.

This son is aware of the fact that the historic starting point of establishing



Your kingdom on earth and the eternal liberation that can possess the substantial sovereignty of love of the eternal realm of liberation already took place on June 13. On that day the simultaneous Blessing of saints and murderers as siblings overcame the weeping and sorrowful mind of the True Parents, and even now joyful cries of liberation are echoing in the spirit world.

Although people on earth are ignorant of this, all our ancestors in the spirit world, the angelic world, and countless believers are all aware of this, and are laboring hard to pioneer the environment for the True Parents on earth.

The fallen angel became the arch-enemy that destroyed your family of love. He initiated all forms of sovereignty on earth by leaving behind the family of the realm of the fallen archangel. However, the spiritual and physical worlds came together through a relationship of united siblings in order to embrace parental love and Your love. They were given the order to advance and were able to reclaim the right of the eldest son.

Now the time has come for the final transition to take place based on the five great saints blessed on June 13, and their blessed followers in the spirit world, members of the groups they have established. Those serving You and the True Parents on earth and in the spirit world will now have to follow the way of filial piety, loyalty and heavenly traditions. That is, the archangelic families on earth should come together and join the liberated realm of the Blessed Families in the position of perfected Adamic fami-

lies on earth. They should strive to fulfill their duties before You as filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, and saints in the world, and inherit the bond of love while tending to the duties of Your divine sons and daughters on earth and in the spirit world. To do so, they should become as one with You in heaven and with the True Parents on earth. Through this, they will be empowered to fulfill this, Your long cherished desire. So please liberate the followers of the saints and the ancestors who are the offspring of the first ancestors, Adam and Eve.

Based on kinship in the realm of love united with the perfected heaven You originally intended, and by serving the True Parents on earth, all those who could not serve them until this time can arrive at the destination founded on the family. This family is the result of vertical and horizontal love coming together, the original ideal of creation. It springs from the bond of siblings, and of parents and children, as formed between the ancestors both on earth and in the spirit world. This is the day of proclaiming that both physical and spiritual worlds can now be connected eternally on the foundation of the cosmic family centered on the True Parents, and that through the liberation of both worlds all families can freely travel in all directions. In the name of the True Parents, the era has now arrived in which we can publicly carry out activities after we have brought all those in both worlds together and established a foundation on earth. Then together with all created beings

we can march forward in full force for the victory of the eternal sovereignty of Your love and the establishment of Your kingdom on earth and in heaven, which is founded on true love and the realm of heart of Your true lineage and that of the True Parents. All this I declare in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (296-9, 1998.10.5)

### 2.7. Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage

January 8, 1999, Punta del Este, Uruguay

This year's motto is "The Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage." This means not being related in any way with the satanic world. If you are centered on what is true, then what is false cannot come between you and your spouse. Last year's motto was "Being proud of and loving the True God means completing the 360 Million Couples Blessing and eradicating the lineage of the satanic world." The fact that we were able to fulfill this motto by September 30 last year shows that the era of struggles in the subject and object partner relationship between the spiritual and physical worlds has passed. In short, we have crossed over the summit and accomplished this by blessing people on such a grand scale. Those couples represent the original Adam and Eve and are standing in the position of having received the Blessing; therefore, there should be no walls separating heaven and earth. This

year's goal is to root out the satanic lineage. It must be pulled out at the roots, and to do so, the realm of the grace of the Blessing must be established in the cosmos, in both the spiritual and physical worlds.

Adam's family should have been perfected through the support of the angelic world. Since the original couple fell, that family needed to be completely cleared away and recreated. In other words, the ancestors had to be recreated into a family in the position of the archangel.

Thereupon we will enter the era of blessing on a large scale, of liberation and blessing of the spirit world. It will be the era of liberation and blessing. When this comes to pass, all the people in the spirit world will be crowded into the archangelic realm of free movement on the family level. In that liberated environment there will be no such thing as the works of Satan.

The people in the spirit world will descend to earth with their spouses when the Blessing is scheduled to take place, and from the position of ancestors they will urge their descendants to receive the Blessing.

Originally, only those who lived on earth centering on the True Parents can enter heaven. Therefore, for those spirits that could not live with and serve the True Parents on earth, the Blessing is a ceremony that opens the path for them to come down to earth to serve True Parents.

Now they are liberated to come to earth, bringing with them whomever they like, in order to receive the Bless-

ing and become married couples. This was not fulfilled in the Garden of Eden. By following their descendants and supporting them in practicing absolute faith, love and obedience, they can live together with the True Parents on earth, and be a part of those following the great path that leads to heaven. Rooting out the deep-seated satanic lineage will make this possible; this is something I must achieve. Do you understand what I am saying?

Humankind is currently headed in the wrong direction, but with the liberation of everyone and the banishment and eradication of Satan, the root of sin can be corrected. Thus, people can follow the right path. Devils and sinners are bound for hell. Being imperfect, they have been heading in the opposite direction. By becoming good, however, they would be able to turn around, face the right direction, and enter the level of the heavenly world appropriate to them. This has been made possible by our opening up the cosmic expansion of the Blessing both on earth and in the spirit world. (298-209, 1999.1.8)

Based on today's proclamation for the Completion of the Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage, all Blessed Families, by making a special offering centering on my birthday, February 20, will be able to rise beyond the level of everyone that Jesus yearned to bless on earth – not just his twelve apostles, but also from the 72 generations to the 120 generations. They will then automatically

enter the realm of the direct dominion of the True Parents and live in an age completely unrelated to Satan.

All ancestors in the spirit world will be liberated. Even Satan should be liberated. Thus, in the future, as tribal messiahs who have blessed 160 families, you will be able to include and connect them to your own tribe and give the offering of total indemnity. On that foundation you will then be able to bless 120 generations of your ancestors. In your lifetime, you need to bless 160 families, and with the Blessing of 120 generations of ancestors we would then enter the realm of the unified world. It would be in stages of 12, 72 and 120 generations and once you completed 120 then all of them would be able to enter. Concurrent with the Blessing of 120 generations of kings including their eldest sons, then the True Parents and God would give the permission to liberate all citizens under their right of kingship.

You need to stage demonstrations and from now on display your pride in the True Parents and in the reality of a true family, true lineage and true purity. You should dedicate yourselves to expand the True Parents' foundation worldwide, and the individual, family, tribe, people and all nations should be centered on the True Parents.

Practice of the ideal of true parents, true family and purity at the individual level should be expanded to the levels of the family, tribe, nation and world. Once the national foundation is laid, then global expansion can take place and we can enter the era of liberation through

the true-parental standard connecting with all levels from individual to nation, to the world and cosmos, as well as the standard of a true family and the bloodline of true purity.

Thus, in order to clear up everything, we need to stage demonstrations. This should come first, even before witnessing or bringing people to the Blessing. Once that has been carried out, there will be no one who can accuse the True Parents; not even Satan or God could make accusations. That place where the liberation, reconciliation and the fulfillment of God's desire are completely realized will be where God's kingdom on earth and in heaven would be established. The church should then cease to exist.

However, the era of the Family Federation will not pass, but will remain until the very end. Everything has been carried out through a prolonged and difficult course of indemnity during the forty-year period between 1960 and the year I turn eighty years of age. By Korean age I am already eighty years old now. Before my coming birthday, all the proclamations will have been made. (298-221, 1999.1.8)

## 2.8. Proclamation of the Completion of the Completed Testament Age and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven

April 11, 1999, East Garden

On a recent speaking tour, I traveled to eight locations in Korea. Mother took responsibility for the Eve nation, Japan, speaking in sixteen cities there, and for

the son nation, the United States, by giving her speech in twenty-four cities. She held a total of forty rallies in forty cities in the two nations. In such a manner the two of us shouldered the responsibility to complete the providential responsibilities of the parents and the children which had not been fulfilled. This was a task that God could not accomplish on His own, and that Christianity could not accomplish, but I took it in my hands and brought it to a successful conclusion.

The Christian cultural sphere failed to take responsibility in 1945, and consequently the forty-year family-level wilderness course of restoration of Canaan ended in failure. Through the victories in Korea, Japan and the United States and based on the right of the eldest son and the thirty-four nations standing in the realm of the Cain culture, I could finally take responsibility for all failures and with full authority bring them to complete resolution on earth. You should understand that I embarked on the recent speaking tour with such an end in view.

On this day I proclaimed the Completion of the Completed Testament Era and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven. When considered from the viewpoint of perfection of the family and all the liberated realms in the spirit world, Blessed Families can be divided into three different types, namely, the already married blessed couples, the couples who had been previously engaged outside the church, and the couples formed by the union of virgin men and women. With the three representa-

tive couples of the 36 Couples I made it possible for previously married couples, and for engaged couples of which one of the parties passed to the spirit world, to receive the Blessing there in the spirit world. Now the partner in the spirit world and the other on earth can come into union through the spiritual Blessing. I am permitting people in the spirit world to receive the Blessing and to have the three-day ceremony. We can assume there are billions of people who passed on to the spirit world when they were only children, and have reached the age of sixteen. People in such circumstances in the spirit world are being blessed, and through the Blessing they stand in the position of having been legally married during earthly life like the other ancestors in the spirit world. Previously they could not have entered heaven because they were under age and not blessed. I have given the Blessing to 1.6 billion such couples.

The Blessing brings inheritance of the foundation of a connection with the lineage of God's true life. Since there are people in both the spiritual and physical worlds who have inherited His lineage through the Blessing, He is able to have full dominion over them. Thus, even now, with full authority He is freely pressing ahead with re-creation and the providence of restoration without needing to set up indemnity conditions. Hence, the question at hand is whether you can stand in the position of His object partner with such conviction. Once you have made your resolution to unite with the standard of absolute faith, love and obe-

dience, everything can be rapidly put in place in the equalized world.

Every one of you should practice absolute love and obedience. The families in Eden had nothing in their name. Had they become true sons and daughters, standing in oneness with God and His absolute love and lineage, everything in the whole universe would have belonged to them, as God originally intended to bequeath everything to His children. Once you have attained oneness with God through love, everything will become yours.

You should not believe that everything you have in your possession truly belongs to you. Of the things you can possess, the greatest of all is God's love, and the greatest thing you can become is a family of His sons and daughters who are eligible to receive His love. This comes first. When that was lost, everything was lost. Conversely, through its recovery, you can recover everything. In order for you to establish such a family centering on God's love, you must create it from a position of possessing absolutely nothing and connect the foundation of absolute faith, love and obedience with the ideal. Having this original standard, you must stand in the position of being denied even by the satanic world.

Everything lost by Adam and Eve can now be fully restored centering on the family through the relationship with True Parents' lineage, which is based on true love. Hence, you should not have anything in your possession, for if you are united with God, His lineage and His love, then everything that belongs

to Him will also belong to you.

As the Messiah and Parent for the whole world, I have assigned national, tribal and family messiahs who should all become as one with God and together with me take part in the great exodus. In this way, we should seek out the original homeland and establish our original nation there and thenceforth spread out to the world through expansion of the tribes. As we need to follow such a path, a great exodus must take place.

The Blessing of February 7 was an event through which I could rectify the failures of Cain and Abel. The responsibilities in regard to Korea, Japan and the United States can be settled once and for all, with full authority within the sphere of victory. We will hold revivals to advance the global expansion of true families.

Please observe how serious I am. I have said that at this coming Blessing ceremony I will open the gates of hell and bless even the murderers, something that not even God can claim to do. I am encouraging them to pass out of the gates of hell and come to heaven. Even those who opposed the Unification Church for years and years and who passed away can be blessed with their spouses who are still alive on earth and have their three-day ceremony in the physical world. I gave permission for this on March 13, 1999, before I left Korea for the United States.

Those who became saints and those in hell who are evil – in short, every spirit from the saints to the murderers will be liberated. According to this principle, the followers of the Unification Church

can bring whoever they want even from hell – even a husband who opposed the Unification Church – have them liberated and receive the Blessing. Such things will take place.

Because of this principle that allows even the saints and evil spirits to unite together, the spirits of children who passed away before marrying can be liberated and blessed after they have grown and reached the age of sixteen or over. I have opened the gates of hell and blessed everyone. Through this, their authority as God's kindred can be acknowledged and Satan has no choice but to retreat completely.

Never has there been a revolution such as this. With these words which I have spoken today, the world has changed. The spirit world has come under Blessed Families, the three-day ceremony can be performed freely and the liberated realm has been opened. Through all of this, the lineage of the satanic world has been rooted out and we are now in the liberated realm of the spiritual and physical worlds under God's complete dominion. (300-300, 1999.4.11)

## 2.9. Declaration of Congratulations for True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory

May 30, 1999, Belvedere

Heavenly Father,

We realize that You have allowed us to welcome the era when Satan's lineage, which has been the source of Your anguish, can be rooted out. We are grateful for Your protection over us, the

blessed group of the Unification Family, whose mission and responsibility it is to transform this world into Your kingdom by completing the blessing of men and women in both the spiritual and physical worlds who yet remain unblessed after the Blessing of 360 Million Couples, and which we continuously struggled to bring about.

I stood in the forefront as their leader, and in order to gain my honor as the True Parent, I withstood alone all the ordeals that came my way, and fought to banish Satan, the enemy of heart of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and heaven. I am truly, truly, truly grateful to You for watching over us, anxious that we might not fulfill, protecting us, and standing together with us at the front to give assistance, as we persevered with our endeavors.

Based on the hard work of Blessed Families who fulfilled the Blessing of 360 Million Couples, we are now 400 million God-centered blessed couples together on earth. With the Blessing as the impregnable fortress as well as the vanguard, I could declare the realm of liberation of Satan's foundation of hell in the spiritual and physical worlds.

Thank You so much for bestowing upon us the grace with which we could establish, with Your help, the victorious foundation of the True Parents together with Blessed Families. In these days of providential declaration, You could recover Your autonomous authority.

On this foundation, with the victorious authority achieved through Your great work that was completed in this

year's eighty-nation speaking tour as conducted by the True Parents, concluded the day before yesterday (January 17 to May 28, 1999), we can now celebrate the time when we can run at full speed along the one-way street to our destination and victory.

Moreover, on the foundation of this Blessing together with the cosmic liberation which took place in the Pantanal, the True Parents could focus on the number eight in an offering of devotion, a total of eighty cities, with eight venues in Korea, 16 in Japan, 24 in the United States, and 32 in the rest of the world. These numbers are related with the number eight. The number eight also represents double the number of the four-position foundation. The tour resolves once and for all the recovery of the lost number eight of Adam's and Noah's families on the world level. It was successfully concluded as a "great awakening" campaign.

By accomplishing this supreme victory two days ago, it is now possible to declare the True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory here at the central and historic venue of Belvedere, but not just in words. This declaration also serves as a holy shield that will allow us to distinguish good from evil and high from low.

Based on this declaration, henceforth, all blessed Unification Family members can confidently carry out their duties on Your behalf as the citizens of Your kingdom and members of Your kindred, for there is nothing that can hinder them from advancing. We beseech and entreat You to connect them to the True Parents'



supreme victory by the authority of the victorious expansion on earth of Your great blessings.

We ask You, the Creator, and no other, to become our Lord, the King of love, and supreme victor totally abolishing Satan's basis for accusation. Stepping over the sorrowful sacrifices of the things of creation in the Old Testament Age, of the children in the New Testament Age, and of the parents in the Completed Testament Age, You are declaring Your ideal and sovereignty of love to the whole universe through the victorious liberation of the Parents of Heaven and Earth in the spiritual and physical worlds.

We desire to fulfill this work in the name of the True Parents, through whom the liberation of the spirit world can be achieved on the day of triumph which brings peace to the earth. We hope from the bottom of our hearts that You will receive our prayer and bless us for generations to come so that we may advance from victory to victory.

We also proclaim before You our resolution to march forward, all peoples and all creation together, into the God-centered nation of absolute victory in the spiritual and physical worlds in the name of the True Parents.

I proclaim this day of victory entirely on behalf of the realm of the True Parents on earth and in heaven, in the name of the True Parents, based on liberation of the grief and lamentation of all generations.

May You be the Supreme Lord of this victory of all ages. Amen! Amen! Amen!

(309-199, 1999.5.30)

## 2.10. Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory

June 14, 1999, Seoul

Heavenly Father! On this day, June 14, 1999, at quarter past one in the afternoon, the historic moment has come when the proclamation of the victorious cosmic liberation in the names of the True Father and True Parents can be made standing here before You. Also the declaration of welcome for the victorious True Parents representing heaven and earth can be made, based on the Congratulatory Declaration of the True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory on May 30.

I am aware of the anguish long-harbored deep within Your heart, which could not be dissolved by anyone in the past. Every moment of the sad history of sin committed in front of You ever since the time of the first ancestors is buried inside Your heart.

I know that many difficulties arose in Your mind as You had to watch Satan accusing, cursing and ridiculing You. In order to resolve this, You endeavored to form the tribe of love that could inherit God's lineage. You intended it to be centered on the family of perfected Adam, developing into a people, a nation, and finally a world of true love to begin Your kingdom on earth and in heaven. However, the providential course to establish this ideal faced continual failure.

Satan has now finally been brought to submission, as a result of which a new era of global liberation has dawned wherein You can establish control of

everything that is on Satan's side by actively exercising Your creative authority. Heavenly Father, we are truly grateful for Your grace in permitting us this time of the Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory as the vertical foundation, along with the Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory as the horizontal foundation.

Under Your guidance, Heavenly Father, from this day forward we can begin to reverse Satan's threats and intimidation. He has been cutting people down, dragging them to the scaffold, and dooming them to hell. We welcome the era of freedom and liberation in which families blessed in the spirit world can come to their descendants to inspire them and reprimand them in turn to lead them, by force if necessary, to heaven rather than hell.

The era has now arrived in which, by Your attaining control over the nations that connect together all of struggling humanity, they can become Your tribe, part of Your lineage, in front of the eternal sovereignty of love.

As Your trans-national family they can liberate all humanity, liberate the spirit world, as well as the True Parents and Yourself. This liberation will remove the position of the servant so as to liberate everything to rise even beyond the original ideal of creation, where You can have sympathy for Satan. In front of Your authority, True Parents dedicate this era.

Please therefore exercise Your power through this liberated sovereignty, mov-

ing between earth and the spirit world. With righteous judgment establish Your kingship of love, goodness, and Your independent dominion, and thus become the eternal King of love and Ruler of the universe, bequeathing to us eternal immortality of love.

The True Parents pledge to govern and teach those on earth the path that they should follow to fulfill the duties of Your filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. By guiding them to become a part of Your kindred having dominion over Your blessed kingdom, True Parents will raise them to become eternal heirs to Your kingdom on earth and in heaven.

Please accept all glory and honor and appoint this day as the day of proclamation. Please exercise Your autonomous right of the kingship of goodness, whereby everything will turn out as You wish. We desire You to do so, again and again and again, and proclaim and declare this in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (302-234, 1999.6.14)

I have lived my whole life for the liberation of the Will. The mission of the Messiah entails being born for the liberation of the Will, living only for the Will, and accomplishing it. This means liberating God's kingdom and God Himself.

Next comes the liberation of this world, Satan's prison, where humankind is held in the bondage of Satan's lineage through fallen parents. Following this comes the liberation of all creation, the creation which is now lamenting.

In order to connect God's will to the farthest reaches of the cosmos, I offered special devotions from May 13 to 15, 1998, in the Pantanal. On that foundation, the proclamation of cosmic liberation was made on May 14 of this year (1999).

Then the horizontal foundation was laid by instituting the Day of Congratulations for True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory at Belvedere on May 30, the day they returned to the United States. The vertical proclamation, the Declaration of the True Parents' Cosmic Victory, signifies that historical indemnification is completed and God is now restored to a state of freedom from anxiety. He can be welcomed wherever He goes in this world, including in all families of the Garden of Eden.

The ultimate conclusion of the providence is the perfection of Adam. What does this tell us? It tells us that the first Adam failed to fulfill the original responsibility given to him. This God-given responsibility is the original basis, the very cornerstone of the family, tribe, people, nation, and God's kingdom on earth and in heaven. However, this cornerstone was defiled and must be cleansed. Everything must be purified, including the spiritual and physical worlds.

The lineage was defiled through false love when the archangel took dominion over Eve, who then took dominion over Adam in a reversal of the proper order... Since God is the Parent with children of the defiled lineage, He likewise cannot avoid being in the reverse position, hav-

ing nowhere to go. Think about it: He is imprisoned. Who on earth knows that God cannot enter the human world? How can He be in such a position?

After God invested billions of years in the creation, Adam and Eve were created as His only son and daughter. How great, then, was God's sorrow when He lost His only son and daughter after billions of years? Moreover, the inherited tradition of love that should have been established was also lost. God could not express His love. He was not able to love His beloved son and daughter even though they were standing right before Him because they had cut off the path through which He could love them. Who can take away His grief? A perfected Adam has to resolve this. (302-239, 1999.6.14)

The era of the arduous course of indemnity is ended. The important thing now is for you to have absolute faith. God began His creation of the universe with absolute faith. Only on the foundation built with absolute faith can absolute love be created and then perfected. Therefore, you need to invest absolute love with absolute faith.

With such precious love God sought the family of perfected Adam for thousands of years, repeating restoration through indemnity throughout history, giving and forgetting again and again. He cherishes a desire for His object to be billions of times better than Himself. You should truly appreciate His endeavors and become families that can liberate Him and of whom He can

be proud.

The mere fact that the Declaration of Congratulations for True Parents' Cosmic Victory could be made shows that the foundation of gratitude before God, the True Parents and heaven and earth now extends goes beyond the scope of God's hope when He created the universe.

It also shows that the victorious hearts of God and the True Parents yearn for the era of the fourth Adam to inherit the entire world and secure something greater than that of perfected Adam. During their lives the True Parents' must liberate God by following the path to perfection that is even hundreds of times more severe than Adam's original course. They must do so with a fully devoted heart that surpasses even God's love.

After completing that path they must stand in the position of filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, saints in the world, and God's divine sons and daughters, and thus inherit everything from Him. In order for us to accomplish this, we must offer everything.

My conclusion is that, once we have offered all those things, God can bequeath everything to us with this eternal victory for all generations. Even the eternal God could not ask for more. He will then be able to exercise global, victorious authority, overcoming His anguish over the Fall. Satan's defiled lineage should be eliminated completely, leaving no trace. (302-246, 1996.6.14)

## 2.11. Declaration of the Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos of the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Gu Gu Jeol*: 9.9. Day)

September 9, 1999, Sutaek-ri, Korea

Beloved Heavenly Father! On this day, September 9, 1999, at 9 minutes and 9 seconds past 9 o'clock, in the True Parents' seventy-ninth year, I have made a clear pathway so that everything can now be liberated which has been bound by Satan through the Fall, both in hell and heaven, on earth and in the spirit world, which tied the spiritual and physical worlds to the realm of the number nine, Satan's number of perfection, and which has been confounding heaven and earth.

This liberation couldn't be manifested even from our time in the womb. The unified ideal did not come into being. Through the lineages of the union between men and women, it should have been connected in the experience of childhood, life with siblings, engagement, matrimony, parenthood and grandmother and queen. Satan blocked this by creating the boundary between the mind and body, resulting in barriers on every level from the period of gestation through the periods of childhood, siblings, engagement, matrimony, parenthood, grandparenthood and even right of kingship. Unification Church members clearly understand that these truths gave rise to a history of conflict between good and evil, in which many of those belonging to the realm of Abel on God's side shed their blood. It has

been a history of anguish wherein the connection with God's lineage that was defiled cannot be regained unless Cain is brought to submission by Abel; then Abel would recover of the right of the eldest son of God's kingdom and naturally the children of the satanic world would submit in the position of the second son.

Because everything which arose from the false parents comes under the number nine, the numbers one to nine are loathed by Heaven. You persevered in providential history to clear up Satan's number, the number nine, through the practice of tithing, in the Old Testament Age.

The path that leads directly from earth to Your kingdom in heaven can be laid down based on true love. This requires bringing to submission this number nine, the greatest of all satanic numbers, on the levels of the individual, tribe, people, nation, and world. Also the physical world must be remedied centering on the True Parents of Heaven and Earth. At the same time the barriers in hell on earth and in spirit world which have been erected vertically and horizontally by Satan must be shattered through the achievement of complete unity with God, the vertical True Parent of heaven. This path, which has been connected through the tears of the True Parents, will spread out physically and spiritually and pass beyond the era of the individual and break down the limitations of the family, tribe, people, nation and world. Thus Your paramount ideal of the family can be disseminated throughout the earth to welcome an era

wherein You can be liberated and have autonomous dominion over the whole world. Based on this, the declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth was made two years ago, centering on *Chil Pal Jeol*. Now that we are in the third year since the declaration, we cannot cross over to the year 2000 without first clearing away the number nine which is blocking everything in the satanic world.

The significance of tomorrow, the tenth day of the month, is that this number ten allows us to pass into the year 2000 from the year 1999. Then God can restore unhindered the physical world vertically from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world, and connect it to the spirit world. This can happen based on the love of the ideal of Adam's family, the original ideal of creation, untainted by the Fall. God's original will to recover the world of cosmic unity could be fulfilled, together with liberation, at the June 14 ceremony of the Congratulatory Declaration of the Cosmic Victory of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, greeted with cheers from the liberated realm of heaven and earth. This could then form the foundation for the Declaration of the Realm of Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos by the Parents of Heaven and Earth, which has been made today. With this declaration, fortune has turned in favor of the unification of North and South Korea.

There exists a gap between Eastern and Western cultures, between the standard of the mind-oriented culture of the East and the material culture of the

West. Though they are in conflict with each other, the two cultures must be unified; the disparity of wealth between South and North must also be eliminated and they must be reunited. Thereby, liberation can take place vertically and horizontally through the establishment of the kingdom of the ideal of love based on the ideal of the family, expressed in the love of siblings centering on the parents. The time has now come when the declaration of the final and conclusive victory creating the realm of freedom and liberation can be proclaimed to the cosmos and can manifest itself throughout hell and heaven, both on earth and in the spirit world....

From this day henceforth, in obedience to the name of Jehovah, we will absolutely obey and submit to this declaration made on Your behalf. By so doing we will turn 180 degrees to face the direction of goodness. We will forge the bonds of absolute faith, love and obedience, thereby restoring through indemnity the fallen act of the archangel committed in Eden. This evil ancestor absolutely opposed the great sovereign Parent of heavenly principle, and His object partners, the Parents of Heaven and Earth. When we stand in the absolute position of achieving absolute faith, love and obedience that conforms to absolute liberation, then not only humanity and the whole creation but even the fallen archangel and hell itself can be liberated. In the name of the True Parents, I proclaim this day as 9.9. Jeol and reveal this truth and make it known across the cosmos. Therefore, I am asking You to allow us to

welcome the era of liberation and heavenly fortune, the era of Your ideal kingdom on earth and in heaven. Therein, the good and evil worlds will become as one with You and the True Parents, and only goodness will remain and flourish! Amen! Amen! Amen! (303-253, 1999.9.9)

I have secured my global domain. Providentially, the United States is the Abel nation and Korea the Adam nation. Father and son should become as one. Until now the history of restoration has progressed through mother-son cooperation, but such an era will pass.

In the history of indemnity until now, restoration was achieved at the sacrifice of the mother and her children, but with the declaration of 9.9. Jeol, fortune has turned in favor of the unification of North and South Korea, and on the day of unification we will enter the era of father-son cooperation. The mother is not primarily essential for restoration, for any number of them can be established. If Adam had not fallen, Eve could have been re-created many times over.

Who would have had realizations unknown to anyone else of how to connect Korea to the unified ideal world and God's kingdom in heaven in the future? Would it be pastors or church elders? Who would it be? The religious world has no idea, for the answer is only known to the True Parents. The Fall came about through ignorance. The first parents fell through ignorance of love, and left behind false love, false life and false lineage. The True Parents have full knowledge of all this. Who is God? How has

history developed? How will the people's end come about, and how can the divided mind be reunified? With my own hands I will bring about the unification of the individual and family, the liberation of the tribe, people, nation, world, heaven and even God. The false parents have imprisoned God, and so it is up to the True Parents, as the masters of liberation, to liberate Him. I have the responsibility to do away with the satanic right of the eldest son, family-level rights and right of kingship. I must establish the domain into which I can welcome God from heaven and secure complete authority over the family, tribe, people, nation, and world. I have been continuously working to fulfill all this. (303-264, 1999.9.9)

How can the numerous races, tribes, and clans come to enter heaven, since they have occupied many different locations in all directions throughout history? The gates have been opened for all of them. In order to become part of the sea, raindrops must fall and flow into the streams which flow into the tributaries, then into big rivers, and finally into the sea. Yet the great river must flow in the opposite direction from now, and since there is no limit to the amount of sea water, it will continue to flow in a reverse direction.

The waves of love, truth, justice and the utopia of God's ideal kingdom will flow up to the mountain streams into the highest valleys, and when they have been back and forth three times, those streams will be purified. After the com-

pletion of the three-year course, God's kingdom on earth will appear before your eyes. You need to understand that we are living in a time of great transition of national fortune. Though there is but one sun, its light fills the whole universe.

The True Parents are absolutely needed by the individual because only they can teach the way to solve the mind-body conflict. Then to whom do the True Parents absolutely belong? They belong to you. Repeat after me: "The men and women who belong to me are the sons and daughters who have inherited the lineage of the True Parents." There is no room there at all for Satan's lineage, not even one inch. To whom do the True Parents belong absolutely? Those who can claim the True Parents belong to them are those who have achieved absolute individual perfection.

"The True Parents are mine! I will even sell the whole earth to buy them and make them mine! The whole world would still not be enough." Even if you sold the whole universe, both spiritual and physical worlds, you would still not be able to buy them. Make a special resolution today that the True Parents are absolutely yours, uniquely yours, unchangingly yours and eternally yours. (303-266, 1999.9.9)

Now, centering on 9.9. Jeol, you need to give the Offering of Total Indemnity. This offering is to be made for the ceremony of liberation and dissolution of anguish. The ceremony of liberation should be performed to dissolve God's



anguish and liberate Him. You should realize that the Offering of Total Indemnity will also liberate the cosmos and yourself.

After the proclamation of 9.9. Jeol on September 9, 1999, then as of September 14 at quarter past seven in the morning, we have entered the era in which we will pray in our own names instead of in the name of True Parents as we have been doing until now. In this era of cosmic unity and liberation, we are entering the era of freedom and autonomy in the environment of the fourth Adam. (304-154, 1999.10.10)

## 2.12. Declaration of the Era of the Fourth Adam (*Ssang Shib Jeol* – Double Ten Day)

October 10, 1999, Uruguay

The number ten representing the month of October in the date of October 10, 1999, signifies a new start centered upon God, and the number ten of the tenth day signifies a new start centered upon the earth. That is why I have proclaimed October 10 as *Ee-Ship Jeol* (*Ssang-ship Jeol*, Double-Ten Day). (304-152, 1999.10.10)

## Section 3. The Seven Great Jardim Declarations and the Establishment of the New Eden

### 3.1. The first declaration: The New Hope Farm Declaration

God created human beings and all creation with absolute faith, absolute

love and absolute obedience. As His object partners, we should also practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience towards Him. (268-262, 1995.4.3)

You must understand that God's mission of restoration has been to recover the absolute faith, love and obedience lost in the Garden of Eden by completely denying the satanic world. Through circumcision in the Old Testament Age, and baptism by water in the New Testament Age, everything defiled through disbelief was cleansed.

What is the Completed Testament? It represents the age of true love. It means giving of yourselves through self-sacrifice and then forgetting what you gave. You need to redeem the fallen world by giving yourself completely in the same way God does. To become God's children, you need to invest yourselves in this world and be resurrected quickly. Thus, you need to receive the Blessing of the change of the lineage. Once you have received the Blessing, you need to restore your nation as quickly as possible, even if it means sacrificing your family. Since you need to practice absolute faith, heart and obedience, this course of action must also be absolute.

If you have become people who can practice absolute faith, love and obedience, you would not need to know about the Divine Principle of the Unification Church. When you have achieved that foundation in the physical world, then through the absolute restoration of lineage, rights of ownership and heart, and going beyond these stages even, you will

automatically become citizens of God's kingdom.

Now the time has come in which I, holding the victorious authority acquired by taking charge in the free democratic sphere and the communist sphere based on the world's 160 nations, can come to the southern hemisphere and establish the world with the ideal sovereignty, God's kingdom on earth.

(268-292, 1995.4.3)

From this moment on, you stand in my stead as well as God's. You should follow wherever He and I go. On this day, April 3, 1995, I make the New Hope Farm Declaration. (268-296, 1995.4.3)

### 3.2. The second declaration: Absolute, Unique, Unchanging and Eternal Ideal Family

God is absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging. As His children, we should take after His attributes and be absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging children, live as absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging couples, become absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging parents, and perfect absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging families. (1998. 8.7)

All true created beings in the world possess ideal love, the love of original nature, centered on God, and so we must become families based on absolute couples, children, siblings and parents. This is the second Jardim declaration. As well as absolute faith, love and obedience, God's nature includes the qualities of

being absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. Since these are God's attributes, it naturally follows that He desires His object partners also to possess these four attributes. Moreover, since He wishes for His object partners to be superior to Him, He would look for more absolute-ness, more uniqueness, more eternality and more immutability in His object partner.

Have you ever served God as your absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging Parent? God, the Origin, is such a parent. Because He is invisible, Adam and Eve were created to be husband and wife, the visible representatives of the absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging God.

If there is only one central being, the Lord of all forms of existence in the world, and the Creator and Origin of the universe, we are sure that the ideal world of humankind desired by that Center would not be as it presently exists on earth. The world He yearns for would not be one of concepts in heaven, nor would it be just a physical world. That world, instead, would be one in which everyone would be included in the flow of love as expressed through relationships of heart, and they would be called His children. Although He may be the greatest entity in the world, the Creator and Absolute Being, He also wishes for someone to fulfill this. This is something we cannot deny.

History is seeking out the true person, the true nation and the true world. We ourselves are aware of our inclination toward become true beings. Then

what is the standard of all true bonds of relationship? It is the parent-child bond between God and each human being. The heart springing from this bond is eternal, unchanging and unique, and cannot be altered on the authority of any being. Moreover, the authority of this heart is absolute. For this reason, all forms of existence would automatically bow down and submit to a being that appears with this authority, and the whole universe would have to follow his every move. This is an intrinsic rule of the universe. If it were not so, we reach the conclusion that we could not achieve our true purpose, nor be able to forge one absolute bond with God.

If we were to consider that human morality and the heavenly principles might eventually come to an end, what form would that end take? That should be the day when God could say to humankind, “You are my true sons and daughters, however much I might try to deny it. My sons, my daughters: my grief and resentment have finally been relieved.” It should be a day on which He can relax, rest in comfort, and enjoy life with His mind at peace. Only when such a day dawns, after such sons and daughters have appeared on earth, could God’s new, ideal world emerge. (7-104, 1959.7.26)

### 3.3. The third declaration: Declaration of the First, Second and Third Creators

God, as the First Creator, created Adam and Eve, and Adam and Eve, as the second creators, created all human-

ity; therefore, it follows that we are the third creators.

Although God’s grief at having lost His son and daughter is great, He is also afflicted with the sorrow of having no grandchildren. So three generations should live together under one roof with a heart akin to that of the First Creator (God). (1998.8.21)

Would God want those who live for the sake of others to perish or to prosper? He would protect them. Unification Church members should always bear this in mind, that the person who lives for the sake of others more than anyone else automatically becomes the central figure. This is a heavenly law.

By the time you have breakfast, you should forget the name of your enemy from the night before. By the time you have lunch, you should forget the name of your enemy from the morning of the same day, and instead set your mind to living for his sake and saving him, following the way of God’s heart. If you do so, heavenly fortune will take care of you, and whenever you feel like turning back, it will urge you to continue along that path. You should not think of your enemies as enemies. I have forgotten the names of all my enemies. When the children of my enemies had no money to pay for school, I sent them money. When they had nothing to eat, I bought them food. Now I don’t even remember who they were. Since such a heart has been beating inside me, now at this time I am able to be the central figure who can set the world right and save the universe

centering on God and that eternal center can be established. This is the logical conclusion.

Not one person in history has ever perished from living for the sake of others. Though I dislike having this said of me, there are many who claim Rev. Sun Myung Moon is the greatest saint in all five thousand years of Korean history, and he is alive at this time! I have met many who wanted to greet me in person and attend me as a living saint. Who taught them this? You should not forget this amazing truth that these actions are brought about by something noble in their hearts. Their ancestors or those named in the family register of loyal subjects in God's kingdom would have come to them during their dreams or meditation time and awakened them to this fact. (1998.8.21)

### 3.4. The fourth declaration: Declaration of the Accomplishment of our Destined Task

New Hope Farm, Jardim

God and human beings are in a parent-child relationship. The relationship between parent and child is our inherited destiny. All sorrows and problems of parents can only be resolved by their children. Such is the path of children. There can never be disbelief or betrayal in a registered family. God and humanity should be united in harmony as father and children. (295-167, 1998.8.28)

Parental love should be fair. Part of being parents entails connecting and

bringing together their firstborn son or daughter with their younger sibling, so that the elder children can love their younger siblings in their parents' stead, and the younger children can respect their elder siblings. The parents should act as intermediaries connecting them together. If they cannot do so, the family will fall apart and disputes will arise among siblings. Hence, parents should educate their children. Thus, our destined mission is to accomplish liberation! This means Adam and Eve have to restore and perfect themselves and become absolute, unique, unchanging, eternal man and woman, based on God's four main attributes. As such, they should then receive the Blessing and become true husband and wife.

God hoped to establish a family and for the firstborn son to be His filial son, but this was lost and the family was not perfected, due to the most unfilial act committed by the first ancestors. A nation should have been established following the tradition of the firstborn, but this also could not come to pass. A whole world following this tradition should have been established, but this too was not fulfilled. Consequently, God's kingdom should have been established on earth and been connected to His kingdom in heaven, but this plan also met with failure.

Do you realize that everything went wrong because our destined responsibility was not fulfilled? The means by which all this can be resolved is through the Jardim Declaration. It requires absolute faith, love, and obedience.

God is our Parent. Parents, including those of the fallen world, who are loving subject partners, are hoping for their beloved object partners to become better than them. This is a heavenly principle. Because our fundamental relationship with God is that between parent and child, we need to form God-centered conjugal and parent-child relationships, that is to say, Adam and Eve should have become His embodiments and a divine couple.

The sperm of the father is like the bone, to which the mother adds the flesh. The sperm penetrates the ovum in the mother and only through this act can that ovum develop into a zygote. The bone! How do the bones first start to develop? They begin with the father planting the seed of the baby. It is all part of the original design. That seed enters the mother, receives flesh from her, grows and develops all the features of a human being in due time; what had originally been only in a seed in concept form starts to grow when planted in the womb by the father taking from the body of the mother and adding to itself. Thus, after attaining a form according to a preordained process, an individual person is born.

There is freedom of love in married life. It should begin in an unrestricted, liberated universe, a place of freedom, where conjugal love would not be hindered by anything, regardless of wherever the couple goes. Based on their love in a free environment, they should be brought together in a unified life of freedom, and through this union, their child

should be born having passed through a natural period of development in its mother's womb. Then when the child claims that he is free, respect for his parents' liberty and freedom of love would be embedded in his words. Freedom cannot exist for the child that denies his connection to his parents and to the free life and lineage.

Hence, you are told to respect your parents. You need to respect the love that your parents have been faithful to and inherit its tradition. Only after you have inherited that tradition can you enjoy freedom. In order for the branch to live and grow, it needs nourishment to be supplied from the roots, through the trunk. Then it is free to grow as long as it is kept nourished in this way; when this is denied, it cannot have freedom. If it is cut off from this lifeline, it will die.

The path of true love is purely rational. If you live for absolute faith, love and obedience, love will grow. Since the seed of love was sown through faith, and it put forth buds, who would be responsible for it? For all this, God would invest everything He has, even Himself completely.

In Kodiak, plenty of salmon can be found. Salmon lay their eggs in the cold winter month of November. Since it is so cold, there are no insects, nor are there any small fish around. All fish swim away in search of warm currents and so there is nothing to eat. For this reason, the mother and father become the food for their young. It is only natural for the parents, the ancestors, to sacrifice themselves for their children. The animal

kingdom has abided by this tradition for billions of years and still continues to live by it; on the other hand, humankind, who should be better than animals in every respect, are not keeping true to this principle, and so it is sometimes said that people are inferior to animals. The same is also true for loving. Animals do not love recklessly. Birds follow their own species in the way of true love. They don't love imprudently. Once they have found a mate and formed a pair, that relationship is absolute.

In the future, family law should be enacted. I have already issued instructions for the fundamental rules to be drawn up. If the nation is established after I have passed on to the spirit world, my absence would not matter so much because you would already have the laws set out on how to constitute that nation. If you abide by those laws as you would my words, and become united and march forward, you would be connected to God's kingdom.

You should understand that you cannot be self-centered, individualistic or insist on your own way. Before asserting yourselves, you need to realize that your father and mother existed before you, and from their lives emerged their lineage. On top of that, love was created. The relationship through which you can learn to respect lineage, history and your ancestors, and which will help you serve them, is the one between you and your parents. You need to respect your parents and then God. What would then be even higher than Him? It would be love.

Encompassed in the mother and father are the absolute love, life and lineage attained through the Absolute Parent and Father of absolute love. You should be aware of the fact that you are born from all this. Thus, you are the representative of lineage, maternal and paternal life and love. Having received them all as the representative, you were born to expand them and spread them wide; since such is the purpose of your life, if you don't fulfill this and instead act as you please and put your greed before everything else, you would be ruined and perish.

It is our destined and inevitable task to unite through the parent-child relationship, but what should that unity be centered upon? From the bone marrow, the seed, it should be centered on true love. Only when a baby is born thus can it possess a heart and body big enough to embrace the whole world as well as its father and to become one with its mother. You should follow your parents with absolute faith, love and obedience, as the grandson and father should follow the grandfather with absolute faith, love and obedience.

It will be handed down as an eternal tradition. Our destined mission is to accomplish liberation! Only then can we fulfill Family Pledge number eight, which is to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, love and obedience now that we have entered the Completed Testament Age. Only when this unity has been achieved can we strive to perfect the realm of liberation of God's king-

dom on earth and in heaven. (295 -167, 1998.8.28)

### 3.5. The fifth declaration: *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day); Declaration of the Family

September 8, 1998, Kodiak, Alaska

We have welcomed the era of the conclusion of the completed and perfected providence in the earthly world.

I. The four-position foundation has been established both in the spiritual and physical worlds.

II. Parents and children have restored the four-position foundation and have sown the seed of ideal families

III. The first and second generations have become as one.

IV. The South (Pantanal) and the North (Alaska) have become as one. (Representing the unity of heaven and earth)

V. Satan's lineage has been rooted out and converted to God's side.

(1998.9.8, Kodiak, Alaska)

Today is September 8, 1998, and when you add all these numbers together you arrive at the number 44. The number 9, which can pass over Adam's four-position foundation, his children's four-position foundation, and his object partner's four-position foundation, is Satan's number, and the number 8 is the starting number. The number 19 comes right before 20. All the numbers connected with nine are Satan's numbers. However, through these numbers will come the era of all-immanence, all-transcendence, supreme authority and omnipo-

tence in which God will be free to do whatever He pleases. In other words, everything in the satanic world will be absorbed into one unified world. Then when would the number 44 appear? It would do so at the time of a historic declaration. The sum of the numbers representing September 8, 1998 is 44, and so that is why on this day I am making the declaration of 4.4. Jeol.

All humankind must return to God in any case. Therefore, I have come to Kodiak in the North, to declare 4.4. Jeol. Centering on the second generation, you are divided into two with the national messiahs in the south, and the Cain messiahs of the mother nation in the north. These two groups should be connected in heart, and the second generation should stand in front of them. You are the plus and the minus, and wherever there is a positive charge, it should be paired with a negative charge.

By my coming to the North, and with the firstborn, the second generation, connected to the plus and minus, I have finally been able to declare 4.4. Jeol, through which the four-position foundations of Adam's family and that of his children can settle and ultimately open the gates to the heavenly world. In preparation for this, I blessed both saints and murderers simultaneously on June 13. They are all brothers and sisters. Satan took what belonged to God, but now God can freely do whatever He wants. Thus, the cosmos has become God's liberated kingdom on earth and in heaven. (295-268, 1998.9.8)



### 3.6. The sixth declaration: Ceremony of Liberation and Unification of All Spirits and the Entire Spirit World

October 5, 1998 (Lunar 8.15), São Paulo, Brazil

Since all spirits received the Blessing without having proper merit, they must aid their descendants on earth in establishing God's kingdom on earth. (1998.10.5)

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is October 5, 1998, which is also Chuseok in Korea, a day of celebration on which the people honor their ancestors. You have worked endlessly to establish the realm of liberation for the Old, New and Completed Testament ages in history to ease Your grief over not having seen this world become a settlement of love, in which all forms of creation, all people in the spirit world, countless believers, and all things created with love and living on earth would have lived together with You. Today, before heaven and earth, Cheongpyeong in Korea, and the people gathered here in São Paulo in the western world, please bring to an end the sorrowful history that You have had to endure, (296-9, 1998.10.5)

The time has now come for the final transition to take place, made possible on the foundation based on the blessing of five great saints and their blessed followers, in the spirit world on June 13, members of the groups they have established. Those serving You and the True Parents on earth and in the spirit world

must now follow the way of filial piety, loyalty and heavenly tradition. In other words the archangelic families on earth should come together and join the liberated domain of the Blessed Families in the position of perfected Adamic families on earth. They should strive to fulfill their duties before You as filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, and saints in the world, and also inherit the bond of love tending to the duties of Your divine sons and daughters on earth and in the spirit world. In order to do so, they should become as one with You in heaven and with the True Parents on earth to be enabled to fulfill this, Your long-cherished desire. So please liberate the followers of the saints and the ancestors who are the offspring of the first ancestors, Adam and Eve.

Based on the kinship of the sphere of love united with the originally intended perfected heaven, and by serving the True Parents on earth, all those who could not serve them until this time can arrive at the destination founded on the family. The family is the result of vertical and horizontal love coming together, the original ideal of creation, springing from the bond of siblings, and of parents and children, as formed between the ancestors both on earth and in the spirit world. This is the day proclaiming that both the physical and spiritual worlds can now be connected eternally on the foundation of the cosmic family centered on the True Parents, and that through the liberation of both worlds all families can freely travel in all directions. In the name of the True Parents,

the era has now arrived in which we can publicly carry out activities after we have brought all those in both worlds together and establish a foundation on earth. Then together with all created beings we can advance in full force for the victory of the eternal sovereignty of Your love and the establishment of Your kingdom on earth and in heaven. This will be founded on true love and the sphere of heart of Your true lineage and that of the True Parents. All this I declare in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (296-14, 1998.10.5)

### 3.7. The seventh declaration: Declaration of the Cosmic *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day)

*The Complete Liberation for the Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Blood Lineage*

January 8, 1999, Punta del Este, Uruguay

You need to achieve mind-body unity, husband-wife unity, and parent-child unity. Thus, you must create an absolute family. This is the second part of the Jardim Declaration, which connects with the third and fourth, and finally, the declaration of 4.4. *Jeol*. Adam's family failed to perfect the four-position foundation and firmly establish itself. It naturally followed that their sons and daughters also failed to firmly settle. Therefore, after passing 4.4. *Jeol*, you need to come to Jardim and receive family training, and return to the path that leads to heaven.

The Old Testament Age required the offering of creation as sacrifices of unity, the New Testament Age required the offering of the son as the sacrifice of unity, and now in the Completed Testament Age what is required is the offering of the unified parents as a sacrifice. Only then can liberation and unity be declared in this world of resentment. You should know that at this time God is overflowing with blessings to bestow on us. Needless to say, the wider the water pipes are, the more water can flow through them, and similarly, depending on how much you offer devotion, prayer and effort, the pipelines of victory connecting you to the spirit world will be installed. So, taking this into consideration, give everything you have in order to offer devotions and prayers, and may you come out victors, not losers, in the end! (298-57, 1999.1.1)

Regardless of how strong the power and authority of the satanic world is, the era of God's authority will soon be upon us. The era in which God is free to do whatever He pleases is coming soon. Only when that era has arrived can this world become God's kingdom on earth.

God should be liberated, and this involves the number four. After the Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament Ages will come the era of liberation from anguish. In that age, you need to offer everything. That does not mean that God will receive everything and keep it all for Himself. Instead, He will pass it all to Adam. Adam will then give back what he has received to

God, and God will then hand it over to the True Parents, from whom the distribution of rights of ownership should begin. (298-63, 1999.1.1)

#### Section 4. The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification

The era for the unity of Christianity has already passed. Since the restoration of the right of the eldest son and right of the parent has been completed, we have entered the era, not just for the unity of Christianity but for the unity of the world. Therefore, as of April 10, we should put aside the name “Unification Church” and instead work under the name of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. (283-11, 1997.4.8)

With the completion of the mission of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, the mission of religion has been brought to a conclusion. For the first time in human history, we have entered a new era that does not require salvation through religion.

The objective of the Family Federation lies in transforming families into ideal families, thereby restoring and perfecting God’s ideal of creation and establishing the ideal heavenly world. (283-9, 1997.4.8)

You must establish a family. Until now, religion focused on the individual; not a single religion set its sights on the family. Religious people renounced

the world and abandoned their families for their faith. We are living in a different era now. All religions without exception preached salvation for the individual and never once mentioned salvation for the family, tribe or nation. On the other hand, the Unification Church is preaching the salvation of the nation and the world based on the family. (283-106, 1997.4.8)

Only when the family has established itself can there be expansion to the world, and God’s original ideal of creation in Eden be brought to fruition. Through sons and daughters, horizontal expansion should take place, then multiplication into the tribe longed for by God, and consequently into God’s nation. (283-84, 1997.4.8)

That is why the family is so important. Everything will be brought to conclusion with the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. Repeat after me: Family Federation for World Peace and Unification! Family Federation for World Peace and Unification! Its very center is the family. (283-93, 1997.4.8)

The family must tread the path of peace and unity as representatives of the world. You need to understand that everything is linked to the foundation that is united with the family. Thus, in the future great families will rise in the world. (283-54, 1997.4.8)

From now on the family will be the center of everything, so no one will be

able to go alone. Even decisions made in the workplace will involve the husband and wife as one team. If the husband is the director, the wife will be the deputy director. When their sons and daughters satisfy all requirements, the whole family and even the whole clan would be assigned to important departments.

In future, much emphasis will be placed on the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, but the world should not be forgotten for all that. What would be the use of achieving peace if there were no world? What would be the use of unity without peace? What would we need families for if unity were not achieved? In speaking of the family, I don't mean just one family. What good would families be without the guidance of the Federation? Everything is related to one another. When you think of the Federation, you should also think of unity, family, peace and the world, and when you think of the world, the thoughts of peace and the Family Federation for World Peace should also come to your mind. They are one and the same. God can only dwell at the place where you become the representative owners of the unified world of peace and the family. (283-51, 1997.4.8)

## Section 5. Crossing Through the Valley of the Fall

### 5.1. The Parents' path is different from that of the children

In the course of the restoration of Canaan, you need to follow me. When

wild geese migrate, the other geese follow the lead goose absolutely. They make no objections whatsoever. When the signal is given, they fly. Even when they are dead-tired, they still follow their leader. This has been their way.

Now that we have reached our destination, given birth to children and multiplied, we should begin to live together, live for the sake of others and love others, forming and loving your clan. This is the task at hand. Until now we have been on our way to the blessed land of Canaan, and henceforth we enter the era of settlement. (115-107, 1981.11.4)

Cain and Abel have no original portion of responsibility to fulfill. Then who would have had responsibility? It would be Adam and Eve, the parents. Since I was given this obligation in the providence of restoration, I took responsibility for what you had failed to achieve and for the errors committed by Christianity. For forty years, in the position of the parents, I corrected everything on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. In this way, I completed the individual's portion of responsibility in restoration through indemnity, erected walls to shut Satan out, and established the realm of the fulfillment of one's portion of responsibility. This is how a new world can begin thenceforth.

Since I have now achieved all this on a level even beyond that of the world, it has now become possible to build God's kingdom. Thus, a new term has emerged – the establishment of God's Kingdom

or homeland. This is all in accordance with the Principle. (148-163, 1986.10.8)

You don't know the path to heaven. You don't know the path of indemnity. Can you claim to know that path? Those who have not fulfilled their portion of responsibility must do so. Satan is able to invade people when they do not fulfill their portion of responsibility. Everything from the individual to the family, society, nation, world and even the spirit world has been invaded by Satan. (137-104, 1985.12.24)

You should not be greedy for yourselves. You should become completely and absolutely united with me. I am the root, and when the root is pulled, the rest of the plant should automatically follow. The stems or branches cannot want to exist for themselves. They cannot insist on their own way. The whole cannot move in two different directions. They are part of one unit. Only after the whole unit establishes a foundation in victory can each part enjoy freedom in all directions. Otherwise they cannot act freely. (169-199, 1987.10.31)

Everything I have taught you is the key to enter heaven. None of the doors will open if the key does not fit the lock. Only when you open the gates with the key I have given you will heaven welcome you; nothing else will succeed. This key of mine is one of original nature. Even a key made of gold or silver, or any other kind of precious metal, will not be able to open the gates. My

key, on the other hand, may seem to be made of humble brass, but it will open the gates instantly. No one else on earth can make such a key: it is that precious. (260-186, 1994.5.8)

You must practice absolute faith. You should walk the path of faith with absolute trust in the True Parents. (46-99, 1971.7.25)

## 5.2. The path of children is the path of absolute obedience

Obey absolutely! Absolute obedience will never cause you to perish. What happens if you obey? You will become one with God. What happens when you achieve that oneness? Evil will be repelled since you would be completely united with God. This is the way evil will be eliminated. Such is the Principle. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

Every one of you should practice absolute love and obedience. The families in Eden held nothing in their name. Had they become true sons and daughters, standing in oneness with God and His absolute love and lineage God originally intended to bequeath everything in the whole universe to them. Once you have attained oneness with God through love, everything will become yours.

The Blessing signifies inheriting the foundation of a connection with the lineage of God's true life. Since there are people in both the spiritual and physical worlds who have inherited His lineage through the Blessing, He is able

to have full dominion over them. With full authority He is freely pressing ahead with re-creation and the providence of restoration even now without having to set up indemnity conditions. Hence, the question at hand is whether you can stand with conviction in the position of His object partner. Once you have resolved to unite with the standard of absolute faith, love and obedience, everything can rapidly be put in place in the world of equality. (300-303, 1999.4.11)

In His act of Creation, God practiced absolute faith, love and obedience; however, the couple that was to be His object partners failed to achieve that position and consequently fell into hell. Since we are now living at a time when we are restoring globally that which was lost in Adam's family, Unification Church members need to practice absolute faith, love and obedience centering on the victorious True Parents. Since the True Parents inherited God's tradition of absolute faith, love and obedience, you also need to inherit that. Do you understand? God's blessing will be with you! (1996.11.3)

What have religious ascetics focused on in daily life throughout history? Jesus is a person to be pitied because he could not assert his own will. Night and day he was absolutely obedient to God's will. Absolute obedience! Why did he obey absolutely? He had to eliminate Satan, who had established himself as the subject being in a triangular relationship with humankind, in spite of the already

existing Absolute Subject, who is in the form of a sphere. Human beings today are dominated by the satanic environment and in order to extricate themselves they need to walk the path most abhorred by Satan. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

Religion tells us to practice absolute obedience in following our conscience. Since God is absolute, the conscience and mind want to become absolutely centered on Him, as originally intended. This is why the religious world teaches us to become a minus in front of God. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

Love goes wherever there is absolute faith. In the parent-child relationship, there should be absolute faith, love and obedience. In order for both sides to reach perfection, parents live for the sake of their children, giving them everything – their blood, flesh and devotion – hoping that their children will be better than themselves. Parents desire their children to be infinitely superior to them, and so they give again and again, and forget what they gave. They give boundlessly and eternally, and forget. In this manner, they should think and serve beyond the scope of the individual, family, tribe and world, and as God exists, they should climb to a place even higher than Him.

The anguish caused by the Fall and all its repercussions need to be dissolved completely on earth through means that are principled from God's viewpoint. If you tried to do this in unprincipled ways, you would be caught immediately, with

no hope for forgiveness.

In this life, I always stand in the forefront and consequently go through more hardships than anyone else. Originally I was supposed to live in a position of incomparable glory that entailed a glorious beginning, a glorious life and the work of building the bridge connecting with the world of eternal glory; yet the reality is quite the opposite. My path began with hardships in the satanic world, and the end will also come with suffering.

On the foundation of your own absolute faith, love and obedience, you need to become families that are absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging, serving God, and from you should emerge an eternal tribe, people, nation and world. Thus we can establish His kingdom on earth, and create an environment that would connect directly to His kingdom in heaven.

Everyone on earth – including grandchildren, children and parents – should be in the same position as Adam, serving and addressing God as their Father. Henceforth, you will all become ancestors. (295-255, 1998.9.8)

You must know clearly about the spirit world. We cannot live aimlessly. You need to form families that have completely passed the test on earth and are free to proceed directly to heaven. Families that have no foundation would be stopped on the way. This is not my responsibility. Haven't I already blessed you? Haven't I built the highway? You have the cars to ride in to go wherever

you want; all you need to provide is the fuel.

I have already made the declaration of total liberation. If you cannot meet the standard then you will be stopped as an imposter. Only those who have passed the test on earth will be allowed to enter heaven.

Until now, everyone entering the spirit world went either to a place like jail or the intermediate spirit world, even those who had passed that test. Now we must restore this world to be like a clean slate and lay a foundation and tradition on earth that will allow us to go directly to heaven. No longer should there be families going to the intermediate spirit world, paradise or hell. (298-232, 1999.1.8)

Because God is absolute, you too should be in an absolute position. As God is unchanging, you too should be unchanging. As God is unique, you too should be unique. As God is eternal, you too should be eternal. Knowing this, we can conclude that humankind must be immortal, that everyone is destined to live eternally.

However much God may abound in love, life or ideals, if we human beings do not have love, life or ideals, everything will be in vain. (169-74, 1973.10.20)

Since the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingdoms were lost, we need to restore them. In order to achieve this goal, we need to follow with absolute obedience, submission and sacrifice, and be willing to do whatever is asked of us. Only after you have done so



can the True Parents come to that place which is free from the satanic world. The men of the satanic world are in the position of archangels and so you should separate yourselves from them completely. Then you would ascend from this position. (235-293, 1992.10.25)

Until now I have not told you to obey my words absolutely. We need to follow faithfully this historic course, the providential course of history for the sake of God. I have not taught you the course of the providence of restoration for the sake of Rev. Moon of the Unification Church.

I too am following this path, marching forward towards the ultimate goal of God, our Lord, and the goal of humankind, which stands as the object. Since these two goals failed to culminate at one point, it is the aim of the Divine Principle and Unification Thought to bring this matter to a conclusion. (71-64, 1974.4.28)

The truly filial son is the one who obeys. The truly loyal subject, even if falsely accused of being a treacherous vassal, does not speak ill of the king as an incompetent leader. Even if he is framed as a villainous courtier and faces death, with unswerving loyalty the truly loyal subject harbors sympathy for his king, sheds tears of compassion for him, and wishes him a long and healthy life. That is absolute obedience.

The one and only path that can bring success through absolute obedience is the path of true love. (164-48, 1987.5.3)

### 5.3. Blessed members' rules and duties

Jardim is important. It is a place on the opposite side of the world from Korea. There, I can give official approval to all the national messiahs and tribal messiahs as families that can enter heaven. In this way, they enter the realm in which they can form part of my tribe and kindred, and set out along the course on earth which leads to heaven. Blessed families who have participated in the forty-day workshop in Jardim should sell whatever they have and prepare for a refugee life during the great exodus.

With the unification of North and South Korea and through Blessed Families becoming one unified whole, a hometown which God can acknowledge will be created; finally a hometown of God's kingdom on earth and in heaven will come into being.

The time has now finally arrived when everyone should unite, starting with the True Parents' family and extending to all tribes, clans and Blessed Families, and for all to settle. When North and South Korea are united, the world will want to follow us in every ideological aspect. Thus it will become one world.

The words "cosmic expansion of the true Blessing and the rooting out of Satan's lineage" signify the complete elimination and transformation of that of satanic lineage. From the year 2000, which marks my eightieth birthday, all tribes living on earth will be bound for heaven. In other words, just as the Israelites departed from Egypt, we will depart

from this world which is the hell created by Satan. Moses headed out of Egypt when he was eighty; similarly, as the king of families, the True Parent will set out from this fallen world. (300-305, 1999.4.11)

In the same way the Israelites followed closely behind Moses, the time has come for you to leave this hell on earth and migrate to God's kingdom; thus, you need to follow a course tantamount to crossing a wilderness. It is the same principle as that of selling everything you have in your current place of residence, which represents Egypt. You would do so in order to prepare funds to enter and establish your hometown. Simply put, you should sell everything you have and pack up, for you will be part of a great exodus.

You should not miss what you leave behind in Egypt. When the Israelites were wandering in the wilderness, living as beggars in the midst of sandstorms, how sorely did they miss the food they had in Egypt, and their comfortable life? You should remember that all those who missed such things met with destruction in the end.

In the future, the families of national messiahs up to three or seven generations, together with the members of their tribe, should sell everything they have to restore the homeland. Then the whole world will be turned around at once. Every possession will be returned to the ownership of God and the True Parents to be redistributed, and humanity will enter an era of ownership of families blessed by God in His kingdom

on earth and in heaven. Then the spirit world and the entire angelic world will unite together to establish the sphere of Adam's resurrected family.

From the individual will come a family, then a tribe, a people, a nation and the world. Together they will enter the homeland on the foundation laid by the True Parents. This is how one's family, tribe, people, nation and world will be liberated together. Those unwilling to participate will end up in hell.

If we are unable to buy land in Korea, there are plans to buy it in South America and divide it up among you. The piece of land I buy in South America will be recognized as having a relationship with Korea. So, when Christians in the United States decide to move to Korea, the Christian realm of the world including South America will all be united into one, and thus it would be possible to restore everything at once. Thus, I have founded the Family Federation, the Tribal Federation, and the National Federation. (300-307, 1999.4.11)

Everywhere you go, you should become an explosive center of action with full confidence in yourself, receive the power that is coming to you from the center of heaven, and push through horizontally. Carry on confidently with your work for the expansion of the Blessing throughout heaven and earth, for there is nothing that can stop you. Heaven and earth will be keen observe families who are true to their work. Through such families liberation will be achieved. Indeed, heaven and earth will be turned

around. Then your blessed tribes should be educated and unified in Jardim. (298-57, 1999.1.1)

With a greater heart than that of God who nurtured His love for the universe at the time of creation, you need to bring your people together and invest everything you have into them without expecting anything in return. We are responsible to form a model family serving God. Its final destination is the highest ideal of a family, with love so beautiful that when the True Parents come to visit, they would never want to leave. In fact, all world leaders, including the royal family of True Parents' direct sons and daughters, would desire to live in the home of this family. (298-54, 1999.1.1)

Your families are the issue here. The question at hand is whether your families can be the nucleus of your tribes and achieve the foundation for unity. Until now you have lived as you pleased. No one knows this better than you. Have your minds and bodies really become as one? Study yourselves in relation to something like crystal, which is translucent from whichever direction you view it. You know better than anyone else that spouses should not clash. (298-63, 1999.1.1)

On my birthday, you are called to make an offering. This is known as the Total Living Offering. It is for the dissolution of and liberation from anguish. A liberation ceremony must be performed. God's anguish must be dissolved. God must be liberated. (298-59, 1999.1.1)

You need to offer whatever you have, even your assets. The queue formed by people waiting to make this offering should be the longest in history. The generations will be decided according to the order in which the offerings are made. That is, the first to make the offering will become the first generation, the second will be the second generation, and so on. Then how many generations would be formed from the people seated in front of me? If you are five hundred in number, then five hundred generations will come into place, so the difference between the first and the last will therefore be five hundred generations. Although you are all seated here together, whoever is the first to complete their task and make the offering will decide the difference between the first and all the other five hundred generations in the matter of registration. This will, in turn, divide you into different levels that are so far apart that it will be impossible for you to meet in the spirit world. Thus, you will vie with each other to be the first, and this competition will be the most dramatic in the entire world. Your ancestors will stamp their feet with impatience and shout, "Come on, you! Offer all your assets quickly and immediately." If you don't, they will trample on your assets and make them worthless. (298-60, 1999.1.1)

Offerings had to be made in the Old Testament and New Testament Ages, and even in the Completed Testament Age the parents need to be sacrificed as an offering. In order to attract God's

heart, we need to create unity and make the offering. By dedicating the offering of unity centered on the True Parents, we will be able to serve God as our Lord, and He will reign over us from our family to the tribes, peoples and nations on earth, and freely form relationships with all humanity of up and down, left and right and front and rear, thereby unifying this world under His dominion, and setting all of us on the same level instantaneously. (298-63, 1999.1.1)

Although we should bring about the day on which God's anguish can be dissolved, most people are still clinging on to their corrupted families bound for hell, protecting and defending them. It is preposterous. (298-60, 1999.1.1)

Hence, as soon as the workshops here are concluded, I will issue instructions to organize tribal education. When that time comes, the era of family-level education will have passed. Those who refuse to receive education in Jardim should be persuaded to go even if it means rebuking them strongly.

Thanks to the existence of family-level, tribal, national and world-level messiahs, Blessed Families are able to come to our facility in Jardim, receive the education as families and qualify to enter heaven. Those who come have their picture taken with me. Without a doubt, those who have their picture taken, will, without a doubt be included in the historic ranks of ancestors. If they do not take the photograph, problems will arise. (298-62, 1999.1.1)

I may soon give orders for the great exodus. Now the time has come for you to turn and go. All Blessed Families across the world need to go to South America as soon as possible and receive education there so as to qualify to enter heaven. I will take a picture with you as my clan. These are my instructions. It is not a matter for the American leaders. Don't listen to what they say, but take the lead in receiving education. If the father cannot go, the mother should go with their son, fulfill this condition, and put in order and pack what they will need for the exodus. They must follow this process necessary for registration. (300-309, 1999.4.11)

Is it a blessing or a curse to tell someone to resemble me? These words indicate that I will hand down all the blessings I have collected with no strings attached. As I have surmounted a high peak, you need to follow in my footsteps and do the same. Then the vertical line formed by our ascent would be one and the same. This is how indemnification should be carried out. (199-188, 1990.2.16)

## Section 6. The Realm of the Fourth Adam Is the Era of Freedom and Autonomy

### 6.1. The era of the fourth Adam is that of natural restoration

The significance of the era of the fourth Adam is that we are entering the age of natural restoration. (304-160, 1999.10.10)

The era of restoration through indemnity has been concluded. Therefore, in the new era of the fourth Adam, through your effort the sphere of freedom and liberation will expand. This sphere will be victorious over the sphere of Adam on the individual level, and transcend the sphere of Adam on the level of the family, tribe and world. (298-224, 1999.1.8)

Now the time has come for your families to become ideal families who serve the True Parents and God directly, and represent the True Parents. You need to become messiahs who have risen above the Old and New Testament Ages and consequently ascended into the Completed Testament Age. You need to form families in the place of the first, second and third Adams, and serve God. This is how everyone will be able to enter heaven directly. Once this happens, we will pass into the era of the Blessing through the liberation of the sphere of the fourth Adam. In that new era, once it arrives, the second generation will be blessed by their parents. (298-224, 1999.1.8)

You cannot fathom how much the universe is rejoicing to see the era of liberation arrive in this physical world. You have no idea how much it is celebrating this day. Every day from the beginning of this year has been filled with festivity. From this day onwards, everything we do will be followed and assisted by heavenly fortune. Heretofore human beings have endeavored to follow heavenly fortune, but now, in contrast, we will be

followed and helped by such fortune. We have arrived at a point where God and the spirit world can mobilize innumerable ancestors and good spirits to help this world. We are living in an era when we can achieve the realm of liberation and be completely transformed. (298-226, 1999.1.8)

The holy wine must be sprinkled over all nations. Isn't it true that one is revitalized when given the holy wine? The liberation of the fallen realm will be expedited. Even all creation needs to receive the holy wine. Then everything would return to the side of God. Therefore, the holy wine should be sprayed across the whole world from an airplane flying overhead, and if not the whole world then at least the major cities, accompanied with prayers. You need to understand how powerful the prayers of the True Parents can be. If they were to ask for a certain nation to be destroyed, it would perish. (298-232, 1999.1.8)

You must become true families, true parents, true spouses and true children. There will be no place in this world where the princes and princesses who have inherited the original lineage and have kept purity can be opposed by Satan. (298-242, 1999.1.8)

God is the First Creator, Adam is the second, and Adam's children are the third. After passing through the three stages of formation, growth and completion, we would enter the stage of settlement. When the fourth Adam

is established, everyone would inherit the position of Adam's children, and expand their families.

This is all about true love, and marching forward serving God, together with the True Parents. Such is the original principle of creation. The True Parents constitute the central root, stem and bud, and as the branches, you absolutely need them. If you are not connected in this way, you cannot receive sustenance from the roots and you cannot grow. Without nutrients flowing up through the trunk, the tree could not spread out wide. Without the buds it would be impossible for flowers to bloom. They must absolutely achieve oneness.

God is the First Creator, Adam is the second. Even Adam and Eve need the third creators, as it is through them that the festival of God's kingdom can be celebrated in this world. Therefore, the fact that we have entered and settled in the realm of the fourth Adam has great significance for the Unification Church. The world of transition is before us in which thousands of generations of our descendants to come, born out of the original Blessing, can respect the traditions of their parents, become one, and thereby enter heaven.

On the foundation of absolute faith, love and obedience, you need to become families that are absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging in attending God. Such families will be in the eternal tribe, people, nation, and world, establish God's kingdom on earth, and create a tradition that would connect them directly to His kingdom in heaven. Like

Adam in the Garden of Eden, everyone on earth would serve God and speak with Him as their Father. It would be the same for fathers, sons, and grandsons. Henceforth, you will all become ancestors. (295-255, 1998.9.8)

## 6.2. The era of praying in one's own name

After the proclamation of *Gu Gu Jeol* (9.9. Day) on September 9, 1999, then as of September 14 at quarter past seven in the morning, we have entered the era in which we will pray in our own names instead of in the name of True Parents as we have been doing until now. In this era of cosmic unity and liberation, we are entering the era of freedom and autonomy in the domain of the fourth Adam. (304-154, 1999.10.10)

## 6.3. The era of creating oneself in the status of the second creator

By inheriting the tradition through becoming one with True Parents, your family becomes the foundation that can govern all nations with the subject tradition and acquires the attributes of a subject partner. As such, your family will enter the realm of the royal family in God's Kingdom. This pattern forms the basis upon which all nations can be governed with the tradition of the subject partner. The place you would thus enter is heaven, a place not just anyone can enter. Three generations must make the resolution

to walk that path. Including grandparents, parents, husband and wife, and children, the number of stages would be four. Seen vertically, there would be three generations. (228-295, 1992.7.5)

What would you need to do to achieve individual perfection? You can claim the status of the second creator when you perfect creativity. You would not be able to stand before God, the eternal Subject, as His eternal object partner if you were just standing alone as one of His individual creations. Do you understand? Hence, this is absolutely indispensable if you want to assume the role of a creator. Without fulfilling this condition, people cannot fulfill God's desire for them to grow to equal status with the Absolute Being, God. For this reason, God had no alternative but to create such a principle. (137-266, 1986.1.3)

Since God's love is absolute, and also unique, unchanging, and eternal, it is possible to live together forever with Him, participating in and inheriting His absolute love. Thus, we create our characters to resemble Him. As we are His objects of love, if His absolute love were ours, naturally we would be His absolute object partners. In order to expand this internal standard in the world created to have God's characteristics, we too must be creators. (303-260, 1999.9.9)

We need to create our environment. With leadership, we need to

recreate our object partners. In creating His partner of love, God gives of Himself completely, over and over again; therefore, in the act of re-creation we should also be willing to give everything, even at the risk of our lives. Once we are ready to do so, object partners will automatically come into being. Isn't there a principle that the perfect plus automatically engenders the perfect minus? When a perfect plus is formed in the nature, the minus naturally comes into existence. (221-25, 1991.10.20)

If you unite with the righteousness of the original love, you can then embody God's original characteristics, be His representative, and God's full object partner. When God created His object partners with His original nature, He also endowed them with creativity – that is, absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal creativity. He placed in that partner an absolute creativity based on love. In order to create, one needs the attributes of a subject partner. God thus intends His object partner to resemble Him. (303-260, 1999.9.9)

Between you and me, who is superior? In what respect? Why would one be superior to another when all of us are of the same mind? The only difference between us is to what extent we put into action what our mind tells us to do; otherwise we are no different at all. Our minds are all the same. The basis of the person and of the mind



is the same; the only difference lies in the degree to which we follow the instructions of our minds, how much we convert our thoughts into action, and how much we cultivate our environment. (222-303, 1991.11.6)

## Section 7. The Royal Family of Love

### 7.1. Heaven is open to those with the qualities of the royal family

Those who have become princes and princesses of God's love, who have become members of the royal family loved by the King and Queen, can enter heaven. Christianity preaches that those who merely believe in Jesus will go to heaven. They will learn the true state of affairs when they pass away. Once they enter the next world they will come to know whether my words were true or not. What is being claimed now is incomplete. All religious teachings up until the present have fallen short. (237-172, 1992.11.16)

The people who can enter heaven will perfect themselves as the princes and princesses of God's love. They will form families and have children in order to experience all dimensions of love as a royal family, and will ultimately bring this along with them to heaven. They can be called citizens of God's kingdom. Do Christians think they can go to heaven merely by believing in Jesus? Belief alone isn't enough. Did Jesus have a spouse? In every era

a reciprocal ideal must come into existence. However, Jesus did not have his object partner. That is why he went to paradise, to wait for the time when he could descend again. The established churches have no inkling of this reality. (236-261, 1992.11.8)

Those who will enter heaven must first pass through the gates as God's princes and princesses, as the beloved children of God's lineage and the royal descendants of His kingdom. Only the royal descendants and members of this royal family can enter heaven. Lineal and collateral descendants, siblings of exemplary love between siblings, will form exemplary tribes and nations on earth. They will bring those qualities and the dignity of a heavenly royal family when they begin life in heaven. (236-204, 1992.11.8)

In a family, the grandfather represents right of kingship dispatched from heaven and should therefore be served like God. The father and mother are the king and queen representing all families in the world. Wouldn't you like your parents to be like a king and queen? That tradition was lost, so we need to re-establish the way of the princes, princesses and the royal family of the heavenly world, and return to our point of origin. Everything that resulted from the Fall, such as free sex and other corrupted things, must be transformed through absolute love and return to the point of origin in order to inherit the Principle way. Then everyone – wheth-

er as an individual, a family, a tribe, a people, a nation or the world – can be re-created. Only then can this world be harmonized. (233-45, 1992.7.20)

God's kingdom in heaven and on earth must be unified through love. The sphere of the royal family of heaven will become the center of everything, both in the spiritual and physical worlds. Thus, unity comes about wherever members of that family may be. My theme here is the unity of God's kingdom on earth and in heaven through love. For the first time, everyone can become united through love centering on the royal family. All nations in the world will be unified, as will all tribes in heaven. (232-326, 1992.7.10)

Didn't hell come into existence after the Fall? In contrast, heaven is the world of love which everyone in both the spiritual and physical worlds can enter after passing through the True Parents' gates of love. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, but instead entered heaven through establishing true parental love, they would have become the model for all subsequent families in the world. Heaven will be opened when the first exemplary family can enter.

All the families that have linked themselves to the love of this royal family of heaven and inheriting their tradition will be like branches pointing north, south, east and west as they grow from that central trunk. Thus, they can enter heaven by the same principle that is the basis of a unified world. You need to understand this clearly. (231-76, 1992.5.31)

The era of registration of the royal family has now arrived. Before one can register, the change of lineage must take place. We need to return to God all aspects of ownership that were lost to Satan's side through Adam and Eve and through Satan's love that was expressed in a pseudo-Principle form. (229-253, 1992.4.12)

Adam and Eve were to be the King's counterparts in love and the crown prince and princess of Heaven's royal family. It should be clear that Adam and Eve were the firstborn son and daughter of God, the Great King of the entire universe. (229-57, 1992.4.9)

You should nurture your families to be fit for the Kingdom of Heaven. Mothers need to keep this in mind and begin to teach this tradition while breastfeeding their babies. Implant the tradition within them by murmuring, "You need to become members of the royal family of God's kingdom. We love you on God's behalf. On the foundation of love shared by your parents, you can become a better couple than us. This is your parents' wish." (236-159, 1992.11.4)

This world has become the devil's haunt, stained with dirty love, the seeds for which were sown by the false parents. Its people, covered from head to toe with the devil's filth, need to be cleaned up and educated to become eligible to belong to the royal family in God's original kingdom. Does this sound like easy work? God has labored for six thousand biblical years to do this – actually bil-

lions of years – but still has not achieved the perfection of Adam and Eve. (227-279, 1992.2.11)

You all need to return to your hometown. What place would this hometown be? It would be your home representing the palace of God's kingdom. Does this thought make you feel good or bad? No matter how shabby your house is, you will think, "The royal family of God's Kingdom has left their palace yearning for mountains and streams, and has made their abode here, where the water is cool and the landscape beautiful." A cup of water offered by this family would be more precious than mineral water because love would be contained in that cup of water. You should understand that the extract of true love of infinite value is contained in that water. You would never fall sick in a thousand years if you ate rice cooked with that water. Wouldn't you like to eat such rice together with your husband? Wouldn't your parents-in-law love to have it? Every time you returned home, you would think to yourselves, "This is a home that represents the royal family of God's kingdom, which have come here longing for a house in a quiet place." (222-101, 1991.10.28)

Grandparents and parents are meant to bequeath the right of kingship to their royal descendants. You should have led lives befitting royal descendants because this is a time when you would inherit that as if you were the firstborn. Yet you have not done so. Since you are now aware of this, starting from this moment

you should live for the sake of your family. When you have achieved unity in love with your grandparents and parents, then God in His kingdom will come down to dwell with you. Then you will be able to live forever in the united love of the eternal God. That family in which He dwells will automatically live for eternity. Those immortal families will form the principal palace of His kingdom. You should be aware of the fact that even in the world today, the movement that connects to His kingdom is now being mobilized in Korea and involves 160 nations. You should know that I am holding high the representative banner of heart in that movement. (222-101, 1991.10.28)

You should become someone whose body and mind can be in complete concert with God's life centering on His love. Whoever on earth may tempt you; you need to follow your path and not be led astray or have to hide. With confidence in yourself you must surmount any obstacles that come your way and become citizens of heaven who are rightfully members of the royal family in the palace of God's kingdom. If you cannot do this, you will fall into Satan's hands. (222-89, 1991.10.28)

Now you need to become members of the royal family of true love. If Adam becomes the child of the direct line of the royal family, his brothers and sisters, as collateral children, would become his people. When entering heaven you need to have within you the loving dignity

and honor of the princes and princesses of God's kingdom. Heaven, the original homeland, is a place you need to enter with dignity after having walked the course of life with honorable steps. (220-219, 1991.10.19)

The citizens of heaven, the subjects of heaven's nation and tribes, are branches of the royal family. In order to be reinstated to your original positions, you need to learn from the experience of the heart of the royal family based on the true love of heaven. Without that, you will not be able to enter heaven. God has been anguished that these things have not come to pass. Not having His prince and princess to love has caused Him great pain. Without His princes and princess He was also unable to have His grandchildren as royal heirs.

In the process of growing up, Adam and Eve failed to love from the position that they could maintain the pure lineage of the King as His prince and princess. They fell into a position midway between God and Satan while still in the realm of God's indirect dominion, based on accomplishments through the Principle. Consequently, they had no foundation in God's love to directly consult God about the development of original history based on the great undertaking of the creation of heaven and earth. (220-47, 1991.10.14)

You may have had your share of troubles up to this point in your lives, but I still have to ask why you haven't begun the work on restoring your tribes into

the royal family. If I were to undertake this task I would finish in six months. When you call out "Mother!" with a full heart, that word connects to the history of a thousand years. In the cry, "Elder brother!" would be love of a thousand years. Through the call, "Elder sister!" you would feel the heart of God in a thousand years of history. Where can that heart be found since the time of creation? When you can step forward and speak of God with the subject nature of that heart, the great work of re-creation will take place. (220-14, 1991.10.13)

Since the family was lost, no families of heaven could be formed, and so God's people could not be formed. Could God's kingdom come into existence or not? God, who was supposed to establish that kingdom, lost everything through the Fall. Heaven is vacant. It is a place that can only be entered by those with the authority and dignity of the royal family of true love, who possess the qualities of God's true representatives and God's object partners. They have nothing to be ashamed of as they stand as the centers of the love of heaven and earth. If this is true, then it is serious for the members of the established churches. (219-33, 1991.8.25)

Love's eternal nature makes it the most precious of all. In receiving your husband, did you feel like a queen receiving her king, and that you were entering the place of love revered by the whole world? With the heart of a queen receiving her king? You must give birth

to your children with that perception of their value. From the day of each child's conception, you should feel that you are carrying a prince or princess in your womb. When delivering your baby, think that you are giving birth to a member of the royal family of hope, dawning like the sun, an heir who will inherit the whole universe. Have you ever thought of such things? (218-358, 1991.8.22)

Had the Fall not occurred, the first-born would have inherited the right of kingship, right of the parent and right of the eldest son of heaven and earth, becoming the palace of God's kingdom. Furthermore, all siblings would have inherited horizontally the traditions of the direct lineage, and the people who lived according to heavenly tradition would have entered heaven. No one can deny that this kingdom is entered by the qualified families and tribes who lived the traditions of the royal family of true love. Given that those who have lived as though they were in the living environment of a royal family, whether it be as the leaves or the branches, will enter heaven, we can conclude that all families must keep the traditions of the royal family of love. (218-222, 1991.7.29)

What is happening in America nowadays? Originally, grandparents, parents and children could not separate. These three generations should not be apart. They need to be united in order to establish the four-position foundation. Otherwise, the foundation for the ideal cannot be made. You understand

this clearly, don't you? Thus, God is creating the horizontal foundation of His love through human beings. If the True Parents had not appeared on earth, God could never have children in the spirit world. For the first time, the children of the original nature will be born through us. Through us, God's royal family will come into being. You should be proud of yourselves on that account. It is up to us to connect all nations to the original Eden. (218-199, 1991.7.28)

What is the mainstream of this changing world? It is made of the people who are building families of true love that come from the parent-child relationship under God's lineage; they stand as the representatives of all of heaven and earth based on His love and their lives affect their environment, even to the very ends of the earth. Living lives of vibrant faith, they can surely become members of the royal family of His Kingdom. (194-220, 1989.10.22)

The people I seek are the members of the royal family of God's kingdom of love. Those seeds with the potential to become such people should be gathered in preparation for the winter of freezing north winds and snow. Only those seeds that can maintain creativity within themselves and bring fresh life when the warm spring sunshine breaks forth and a warm breeze blows from the south, and respond to that sunlight, may sprout forth as the buds of new life. (180-62, 1988.8.20)

What should we achieve during our lifetime? We should leave behind a legacy of love felt by all who visit our family tomb. That is my conclusion: we should leave behind a tomb of love! I would want nothing else in this moment if I could live surrounded by such monuments to love. Even though one may weary of living amid tombs, when surrounded by love, one would want for nothing more. Let us make such legacies of love whilst we are yet alive! If we achieve this, we will have been successful in life. When you pass away after leading such a life, God will come out with His children to welcome and bless you. When that time comes, if your fingers are bare, the diamond rings of His kingdom will be placed on them, and if you are shabbily dressed, you will be clothed with raiment worn by the royal family of His kingdom. (97-167, 1978.3.12)

## 7.2. Become a person of love

There is a great difference between God's joy before the Creation, and the great stimulation of love He felt when harmonizing with His partners in love thereafter. Even if He were to dance and dance for a thousand or tens of thousands of years, that joy would not come to an end. But could God dance alone? Would He want to sing alone? We were born because of love and we live to become the objects of the Lord of love who will unite the universe and have dominion over it. Then we too would be able to be lords of love. Seen in light of God's intense hopes at the time of Cre-

ation, God's beloved object partners are superior to Him, are to stand in a position above Him.

Consequently, when we call out, "Heavenly Father" He comes to us, and when we tell Him, "Come on," He follows in our wake and never complains. Even when He is made to follow us for thousands of miles, He will gladly continue to walk behind us. Words cannot express the joy felt by parents following their children. When heaven and earth harmonize with and welcome their children even more than themselves, the parents will be so pleased that even their cells will burst forth in peals of laughter. (215-109, 1991.2.6)

Everything and everyone can become a friend through true love. Even rocks can speak in a certain way; they will talk about how they came into existence at the time of creation, their mode of life, and much else. Of course God is aware of all this. No matter how majestic and unyielding mountains may seem, they will want to receive love from God. If He were to cast His eyes upon a mountain and ask, "How did you come to be so big?" would He reprimand the mountain if it replied, "I became so big to give joy to You"? Each and every being in the world is affected by love; all of them have become objects of love. (183-49, 1988.10.29)

How can we perceive the beauty of nature? "Though you look like this, from my viewpoint, you are offsetting what would otherwise be lopsided in front of the universe and world creat-

ed under the banner of love. In creating harmony, a stimulating sound needs to be added, and that is why high and low pitches exist in the universe; you too exist in the communal realm of ideal reality to play a part similar to such musical notes!” When you are able to think like this, your viewpoint will be similar to God’s.

Wherever love may be, it is always in pursuit of newness. What began before eternity and what continues to exist after eternity are similar. Thus, we can experience God’s feelings, since love has the power to let us feel God’s original heart as He created the universe. In this manner the creation can also speak and feel. (182-125, 1988.10.16)

An elastic band makes a noise like “ping...ping...ping” as it is stretched, and then returns to its original length when released. God understands that true love is similar to this elastic band. He will never want to cut it off. When you have finally reached perfection, He will tell you, “I will follow you forever with true love that is like an elastic band. Even if you are very powerful, you will not be able to cut it off. The least you can do is to protect it, for it is precious!”

God Himself is that elastic band of true love. Obey Him, submit to Him completely, respect Him absolutely and ask Him what He needs. He will reply, “I

don’t need money; within me are mountains and oceans filled with money.” If He needed money, then through His creative power He would be able to turn this whole world into diamond and gold mines. He created everything. Nothing would be impossible for Him. (217-255, 1991.6.2)

You need to understand that there is no one on earth who would not be devoted to parents who are willing to suffer and carry the cross for their children forever, and give such parental love that the world and even God Himself would exclaim, “You are much better than I!”? Wouldn’t you want to be in such a position? If you live with a heart of gratitude for the life you are leading at present, even after giving everything you have over many years, yet always keeping His thoughts in your mind, then God Himself will praise you.

If children live with such an attitude toward their parents, husbands toward their wives, wives toward their husbands, the family toward the nation, and the nation toward the world, how splendid that world will be! When that happens, God will not want to stay in the spirit world. He will quickly descend to the center of the human world and dwell here, recommencing the work of creation so that everyone can live abundantly. (215-243, 1991.2.20)